



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

By 307.54.45.3

**Harvard College
Library**



**BOUGHT FROM THE FUND
BEQUEATHED BY**

Evert Jansen Wendell

CLASS OF 1882

of New York



||

||

||

||

HUME AND SMOLLET'S
HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

VOL. II.



DEATH OF WOLF.

HUME AND SMOLLETT'S

HISTORY OF ENGLAND

Abridged,

AND

CONTINUED TO THE ACCESSION

OF

GEORGE IV.

BY JOHN ROBINSON, D. D.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

EXETER:

J. & B. WILLIAMS.

1828.

Digitized by Google

PL 307.54.45.3

**HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
FROM
THE BEQUEST OF
EVERT JANSEN WENDELL
1918**

47-6
2651
27(2)

THE
HISTORY OF ENGLAND

CHAPTER I.

Reign of James I.

THE crown of England passed from the family of Tudor to that of Stuart with the utmost tranquillity. In James's journey from Edinburgh to London in 1603] ranks flocked around him, allured by the interest of curiosity; and he was so well pleased with the flow of affection which appeared in his subjects, that in six weeks after his entrance into the kingdom, he conferred the honour of knighthood on no fewer than two hundred and thirty-seven persons besides raising several from inferior to higher dignities; and among the rest the Scottish courtiers were thought to be especially favoured.

It must be confessed, however, that James left most all the chief offices in the hands of Elizabethan ministers, and intrusted the conduct of political concerns to his English subjects. Among these, Cecil was successively created lord Effingham, viscount Cranbourne, and earl of Salisbury, and regarded as prime minister and chief counsellor. A secret correspondence into which he had entered with James during the latter years of Elizabeth's reign, laid the foundation of Cecil's credit; and while all his former associates, sir Walter Raleigh, lord Grey, and lord Cobham, were discountenanced on account of their animosity against Essex, this minister was continued in his employment, and treated with the greatest confidence and regard.

Amidst the great tranquillity, both foreign and domestic, which the nation enjoyed, nothing could

more unexpected than the discovery of a conspiracy to subvert the government, and to place on the throne Arabella Stuart, a near relation of the king's, and equally descended from Henry the Seventh. Sir Walter Raleigh, one of the principals in the plot, contrary to all laws and equity, was found guilty by a jury; but he was reprieved, not pardoned; and he remained in confinement for many years.

The religious disputes between the church and the puritans, which had been continually increasing ever since the reformation, induced the king to call a conference at Hampton-court, on pretence of finding expedients which might reconcile both parties. 1604] The disposition of James, however, had received a strong bias against the puritanical clergy in Scotland; and he showed the greatest propensity to the established church, and frequently inculcated as a maxim, NO BISHOP, NO KING.

The severe, though popular government of Elizabeth, had confined the rising spirit of liberty within very narrow bounds: but when a new and foreign family succeeded to the throne, and a prince less dreaded and less beloved, principles of a more independent nature appeared in the nation. The king, however, told the parliament, "that all their privileges were derived from his grant, and hoped they would not turn them against him" James of his own accord annulled all the numerous patents for monopolies; but the exclusive companies still remained, and almost all the commerce of England centered in London, the trade of which was confined to about two hundred citizens.

One of the most memorable events recorded in history is the "Gunpowder Plot." The Roman catholics had expected great favour from James; and they were surprised and enraged to find that, on all occasions, he expressed his intention of strictly executing the laws against them. Catesby, a gentleman of an ancient family, first thought of a most extraordinary method of revenge, which was to destroy at one blow, the king, the royal family, the lords, and the commons, by running a mine below the hall in which the parliament assembled, and choosing the very moment in which the king harangued both houses. This diabolical scheme he communicated to Percy, a descend-

ant of the illustrious house of Northumberland, who was charmed with the project; and they agreed cautiously to enlist some other conspirators, and sent over to Flanders in quest of one Guy Fawkes, an officer in the Spanish service, with whose zeal and courage they were well acquainted.

The conspirators bound themselves by oath of secrecy, which they confirmed by receiving the sacrament together; and they hired a house in the name of Percy, adjoining that in which the parliament assembled. Finding that a vault under the house of lords was to let, they seized the opportunity of renting it, 1605] and deposited in it thirty-six barrels of powder which they covered with faggots and billet wood. The doors of the cellar were then thrown boldly open, as if it contained nothing dangerous, and, confident of success, the conspirators now planned the remaining part of their project.

The king, the queen, and prince Henry, were all expected to be present at the opening of the parliament; but as the duke, by reason of his tender age, would necessarily be absent, it was resolved to assassinate him. The princess Elizabeth, a child likewise, was kept at lord Harrington's house in Warwickshire; and it was determined to seize that princess and proclaim her queen.

Though more than twenty persons were engaged in this conspiracy, the dreadful secret had been sacredly kept nearly a year and a half. No remorse, no pity, no fear of punishment, or hope of reward, had induced any conspirator either to abandon the enterprise, or discover the plot. A few days, however, before the meeting of parliament, lord Monteagle, a catholic, and son to lord Morley, received the following letter, from an unknown hand.*

“My lord, out of the love I bear to some of your friends, I have a care of your preservation. There-

* There is strong reason to believe that this letter was sent by Mary, eldest daughter of lord Morley, sister to lord Monteagle, and wife of Thomas Abington, esq. of Henslip, in the county of Worcester. Affection for her brother prompted the warning, while love for her husband, who was privy to the conspiracy, suggested such means as were best calculated to prevent his detection.

fore I would advise you, as you tender your life, to devise some excuse to shift off your attendance in this parliament. For God and man have concurred to punish the wickedness of this time. And think not slightly of this advertisement; but retire yourself into your country, where you may expect the event in safety. For though there be no appearance of any stir, yet I say, they will receive a terrible blow this parliament, and yet they shall not see who hurts them. This counsel is not to be contemned, because it may do you good, and can do you no harm: for the danger is past as soon as you have burned the letter. And I hope God will give you the grace to make good use of it, unto whose holy protection I commend you."

Monteagle, as well as Salisbury, to whom he communicated it, considered the letter as a foolish attempt to frighten; but, from the serious and earnest manner in which it was written, James conjectured that it implied something dangerous and important; and the enigmatical but strong expressions used in the epistle, seemed to denote some contrivance by gun powder.* In consequence, it was determined to inspect all the vaults under the house of parliament; but the search was purposely delayed till the day before the meeting of parliament. This care belonged to the earl of Suffolk, lord chamberlain, who remarked the great piles of wood and faggots in the vault under the upper house; and he observed Fawkes in a corner, who passed himself as Percy's servant. About midnight, sir Thomas Knevet, with proper attendants, entered the vault; and after seizing Fawkes, he removed the faggots, and discovered the powder. The matches and other preparations for setting the whole on fire, were found in the pockets of Fawkes, who, seeing it useless to dissemble, boldly expressed his regret that he had lost the opportunity of firing the powder at once, and of sweetening his own death by that of his enemies. Before the council he displayed the same intrepidity, and refused to discover his accomplices; but being confined in the Tower, and left to reflect on his guilt and danger, his courage failed in a few days, and he made a full discovery of the

* James might probably be led to this conclusion from recollecting the catastrophe of his father. *Mavor*

conspirators, who never exceeded the number of eighty. They all suffered death by one way or other; and horrible as the crime was, the bigoted catholics regarded some of them as martyrs.

At this time, James seems to have possessed the affections of his English subjects and of the parliament. His learning, which was not despicable, obtained him the name of the second Solomon. All his efforts, however, for an union between England and Scotland proved ineffectual, on account of the national antipathy by which the English parliament was governed; and he could procure only an abolition of the hostile laws which had been formerly enacted between the two kingdoms.

The house of commons began now to feel themselves of such importance, that on the motion of sir Edwin Sandys, they entered for the first time, an order for the regular keeping of their journals.

In the following session, the lord-treasurer Dorset 1610] laid open the king's necessities, but the commons refused to relieve them; and James received the mortification of discovering in vain, all his wants, and of asking the aid of his subjects, who seemed determined to diminish the power of the crown. Inheriting all the high notions of regal government that had marked the reigns of Henry and Elizabeth, James was continually employed in endeavouring to preserve the prerogatives which former sovereigns had enjoyed, but which a more enlightened age and a less obsequious parliament deemed absolutely necessary to circumscribe. In his first parliament, which sat nearly seven years, frequent attacks were made on the royal prerogative; and the king displayed all his exalted notions of monarchy and the authority of princes; but the principles which these popular attempts developed, and which opposition served only to increase, at last overturned the throne, and plunged the nation in confusion.

In promoting the civilization of Ireland, James proceeded on a regular and well-concerted plan; and he found it necessary to abolish the ancient customs, which supplied the place of laws. By the Brehen custom, every crime, however enormous, was punished by a pecuniary fine. This rate was called eric. When

HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

the English had formed the design of sending a sheriff into Fermanagh, Maguire, a chief of that district, replied, "Your sheriff shall be welcome to me; but let me know beforehand his eric, or the price of his head, that if my people cut it off, I may levy the money on the county." Small offences were subject to no penalty; and in this horrible state of society, the efforts of James to produce amelioration were highly deserving of praise. In the room of savage institutions, he substituted English laws; took the natives under his protection, and declared them free citizens; and governed the kingdom by a regular administration, military as well as civil.

This year the sudden death of Henry, prince of Wales, in the eighteenth year of his age, diffused a general grief throughout the nation. Neither his high birth nor his youth had seduced him into any irregularities; business and ambition were his sole delight; 1612] and his inclinations as well as exercises were martial. The French ambassador, taking leave of him, and asking his commands for France, found him employed in the exercise of the pike: "Tell your king," said he, "in what occupation you left me engaged." He had conceived great affection and esteem for sir Walter Raleigh, who was prisoner in the Tower. "Surely," observed he, "no king but my father would keep such a bird in a cage."

The marriage of the princess Elizabeth with Frederic, elector palatine, served to dissipate the grief which arose from that melancholy event; but this marriage, though happy to the nation in its remote and ultimate consequences, was unfortunate both to the king and his son-in-law. The elector, trusting to so great an alliance, engaged in enterprises beyond his strength; and the king, not being able to support him in his pretensions, lost entirely, towards the end of his life, the affection and esteem of his own subjects.

The history of this reign is more properly a history of the court than of the nation. About the end of the year 1609, Robert Carre, a youth of twenty years of age, and of a good family in Scotland, arrived in London, and was introduced to the English court. The charms of his person and the elegance of his manners soon won the affections of James, who successively

knighted him, created him viscount Rochester, and gave him the garter. In sir Thomas Overbury, this minion met with a judicious and sincere counsellor; and so long as he was governed by his friendly counsels, he enjoyed the highest favour of his sovereign, without being hated by the people. Intoxicated, however, by his good fortune, Rochester found means to seduce the affections of the young countess of Essex, daughter of the earl of Suffolk, though she rejected the embraces of her husband; and in spite of the remonstrances of Overbury, a divorce was procured, and a marriage solemnized between the two adulterers. On this occasion, the king so far forgot the dignity of his character, and his friendship to the family of Essex, that, lest the lady should lose any rank by her new marriage, he created his minion earl of Somerset.

The countess, however, was not satisfied till she could satiate her revenge on Overbury, who had been committed to the Tower, at the instance of Somerset, for disobeying an order of the king. She engaged her husband, as well as her uncle, the earl of Northampton, in the atrocious design of destroying him secretly by poison. Fruitless attempts were reiterated by weak doses; but at last they gave him one so sudden and violent, that the symptoms were apparent to every one who approached him; and though a strong suspicion prevailed in the public, the full proof of the crime was not brought to light for some years after.

The fatal catastrophe of sir Thomas Overbury increased or begat a suspicion that the prince of Wales had been carried off by poison, given him by Somerset; and the king was not spared amidst the just imputations thrown on his favourite.

A new parliament was again summoned, after every expedient had been tried to relieve the king's necessities, even to the sale of baronetages and peerages; 1614] but that assembly, instead of entering on the business of supply, as urged by the king, began with disputing his majesty's power of levying new customs and impositions, by the mere authority of his prerogative. The king, with great indignation, dissolved the parliament, without obtaining the smallest supply to his necessities; and he imprisoned some of the members, who had been most forward in their op-

position to his measures; and though he valued himself highly on his king-craft, he openly at his table inculcated those monarchical principles which he had so strongly imbibed. Among other company, there sat at table two bishops, Neile and Andrews. The king publicly proposed the question, whether he might not take his subjects' money when he needed it, without all this formality of parliament? The obsequious Neile replied, "God forbid you should not; for you are the breath of our nostrils." Andrews declined answering; but when the king urged him, he pleasantly observed, "I think your majesty may lawfully take my brother Neile's money, for he offers it."

The favourite had hitherto escaped the inquiry of justice; but conscious of the murder of his friend, he became sullen and silent; and the king began to estrange himself from a man who no longer contributed to his amusement. The enemies of Somerset seized the opportunity of throwing a new minion in the king's way, in the person of George Villiers, a youth of one and twenty, who was immediately raised to the office of cup-bearer. In the mean time, Somerset's guilt in the murder of sir Thomas Overbury was fully discovered; and James, alarmed and astonished at such enormous guilt in a man whom he had so highly honoured, recommended a most rigorous scrutiny. All the accomplices received the punishment of death; but the king bestowed a pardon on the principals, Somerset and the countess: and after some years imprisonment, he restored them to their liberty, and they languished out their old age in infamy and obscurity.

The fall of Somerset opened the way for Villiers, who, in the space of a few years, by rapid advances, was at last created duke of Buckingham, knight of the garter, master of the horse, and lord high-admiral of England, with other honourable appointments. His mother obtained the title of countess of Buckingham; his brother was created viscount Purbec; and a numerous train of needy relations were all invested with credit and authority.

Sir Walter Raleigh had been imprisoned for thirteen years; and men had leisure to reflect on the hardship and injustice of his sentence. They pitied his active and enterprising spirit, which languished in

the rigours of confinement; and they admired his extensive genius, no less than his unbroken magnanimity. To increase these favourable dispositions, on 1618] which he built the hopes of recovering his liberty, Raleigh spread the report of a rich gold mine, which he had discovered in Guiana. The king gave little credit to the tale, but released him from the Tower, without pardoning him, and suffered him to try the adventure.

Raleigh had declared that the Spaniards had planted no colonies on that part of the coast where this mine lay; but it had happened, that, in a space of twenty-three years which had elapsed since he had last visited that region, they had formed a settlement on the river Oronooko, and built a town called St. Thomas. To this place Raleigh directly bent his course, and sent a detachment under the command of his son, and of captain Kemys, an officer entirely devoted to him. The Spaniards, who had expected this invasion, fired on the English at their landing, were repulsed, and pursued into the town. Young Raleigh received a shot, of which he immediately expired; but the town was carried, and afterwards reduced to ashes. Kemys, who owned that he was within two hours' march of the mine, returned to Raleigh with the melancholy news of his son's death; and, despairing of the success of the enterprise, he retired to his cabin, and put an end to his life.

The other adventurers now concluded, that they were deceived by Raleigh; and thinking it safest to return immediately to England, they carried him with them. The privy-council pronounced that Raleigh had abused the king's confidence; and the court of Spain raising loud complaints against him, the king made use of that power which he had purposely reserved in his own hands, and signed the warrant for his execution upon his former sentence.

Raleigh, finding his fate inevitable, collected all his courage and resolution. As he felt the edge of the axe with which he was to be beheaded, "Tis a sharp remedy," he said, "but a sure one for all ills." His harangue to the people was calm and eloquent; and, with the utmost indifference, he laid his head on the block, and received the fatal blow.

The execution of this sentence, which was at first hard, and which had been so long suspended, gave general dissatisfaction ; and it was rendered still more invidious and unpopular by the intimate connexions entered into with Spain. Godemar, the Spanish ambassador, in order to withdraw the attention of James from Germany, had offered the second daughter of Spain in marriage to prince Charles, with an immense fortune. The bait took ; and though the states of Bohemia, inspired with the love of civil and religious liberty, had taken up arms against the emperor Ferdinand, and tendered their crown to Frederic, elector palatine, probably on account of his connexion with England, James refused to lend any assistance to his son-in-law, and Frederic, being defeated in the great and decisive battle of Prague, was driven from the palatinate, and fled with his family into Holland.

High were now the murmurs and complaints against the inactive disposition of the king, who flattered himself, that after he had formed an intimate connexion with the Spanish monarch, by means of his son's marriage, the restitution of the palatinate might be procured, from motives of friendship alone.

At this time the great seal was in the hands of Francis Bacon, lord Verulam, a man universally admired for the sublimity of his genius ; but his want of economy, and his indulgence to servants, involved him in necessities ; and he received bribes which rendered him obnoxious to censure. Being impeached by the commons, the peers sentenced him to pay a fine of forty thousand pounds, to be imprisoned in the Tower during the king's pleasure, and to be for ever incapable of holding any office, place, or employment. Bacon, however, was soon released from prison, the fine was remitted, and, in consideration of his great merit, a pension of eighteen hundred pounds a-year was conferred upon him ; and his literary productions have made his guilt or weakness be forgotten or overlooked by posterity.

In the mean time, the commons entreated his majesty, that he would immediately undertake the defence of the palatinate ; that he would turn his arms against Spain ; and that he would enter into negotiations for a marriage with his son only with a protes-

tant princess. This seeming invasion of his prerogative highly incensed James, who, in a letter to the speaker, sharply rebuked the house for debating on matters far above their capacity, and forbade them to meddle with any subject that regarded his government. This letter inflamed the commons, who, after another ineffectual remonstrance, framed a protestation, in which they repeated all their claims for freedom of speech, and an unbounded authority to interpose with their advice and counsel. They asserted that the liberties, franchises, privileges, and jurisdictions of parliament, are the ancient and undoubted birthright of the subjects of England. This protestation the king himself tore from the journals; and, after committing some of the leading members of the house to the Tower, he finally dissolved the parliament. These struggles, between prerogative on the one hand, and privilege on the other, terminated only with the overthrow of the monarchy, under the unfortunate Charles the First.

In vain did James, by reiterated proclamations, forbid the discussing of state affairs. Such proclamations, as might naturally be expected, served rather to inflame the curiosity of the public. The efforts of Frederic for the recovery of his dominions were vigorous, but ineffectual; and James now persuaded his son-in-law to disarm, and to trust to his negotiations. To show, however, the estimation in which James's negotiations were held abroad, in a farce acted at Brussels, a courier announced that the palatinate would soon be wrested from Austria, as succours from all quarters were hastening to the relief of the despoiled elector: the king of Denmark, he said, had agreed to contribute to his assistance one hundred thousand pickled herrings; the Dutch, one hundred thousand butter boxes; and the king of England, one hundred thousand ambassadors. On other occasions, James was depicted with a scabbard, but without a sword; or with a sword, which no one could draw, though several were pulling at it.

In order to remove all obstacles to the match between the infants of Spain and prince Charles, James despatched the earl of Bristol to Philip IV.; all matters were adjusted, and the dispensation from Rome

only was wanting, when this flattering prospect was blasted by the temerity of Buckingham.

A coolness between this favourite and the prince of Wales had taken place; and Buckingham, desirous of an opportunity which might connect him with Charles, and also envious of the great credit acquired by Bristol, proposed a journey of courtship to Madrid. The young and ardent mind of the prince eagerly embraced the scheme; and the king was prevailed on to grant his consent to the undertaking, though not without much reluctance and apprehension of the result.

The prince and Buckingham, with their attendants, passed disguised and undiscovered through France; and they even ventured into a court-ball at Paris, where Charles saw the princess Henrietta, whom he afterwards espoused, and who was at that time in the bloom of youth and beauty. In eleven days after their departure from London they arrived at Madrid, and surprised every one by a step so unusual among great princes. The Spanish monarch treated Charles with the utmost respect and the most flattering attentions; but the infanta was only shown to her lover in public, the established etiquette not allowing any farther intercourse till the arrival of a dispensation from Rome. The king of England, as well as the prince, became impatient; and the latter having taken his leave, embarked on board an English fleet, and returned to England. Charles had endeared himself to the whole Spanish nation, by whom he was beloved and esteemed; while Buckingham, by his indecent freedoms and his dissolute pleasures, had rendered himself universally despised and hated. Through the intrigues of Buckingham, who dreaded the influence of the Spaniards in England after the arrival of the infanta, the match was broken off; and James was induced to abandon a project which, during many years, had been the object of his wishes, and which had been brought near to a happy conclusion.

The king, having thus involuntarily broken with
1624] Spain, was obliged to summon a parliament, in
order to procure the necessary supplies; and in
that assembly, Buckingham threw all the blame on
the court of Spain, which he accused of artifice and
cruelty. The parliament advised the king to break

off both treaties with Spain, as well that which regarded the marriage, as that for the restitution of the palatinate. The supply, however, was voted with parsimony; and to it were annexed conditions, which trenched on the prerogative, but which at last produced legitimate liberty.

After the rupture with Spain, a treaty of marriage between the prince of Wales and Henrietta of France was speedily concluded; but military enterprises were extremely disagreeable to James, whose disposition 1625] incapacitated him for war. The English nation, however, were bent on the recovery of the palatinate; and an army of twelve thousand foot and two hundred horse, under the command of count Mansfeldt, were embarked at Dover; but so ill had this expedition been concerted, that half of the troops died on board by a pestilential disorder, before they were permitted to land, and the other half, weakened by sickness, appeared insufficient to march into the palatinate.

James, who had zealously cultivated the arts of peace, did not long survive the commencement of hostilities. He was seized with a tertian ague, and finding himself gradually becoming weaker, he sent for the prince, whom he exhorted to bear a tender regard for his wife, but to preserve a constancy in religion, to protect the church of England, and to extend his care to the unhappy family of the palatine. With decency and fortitude he prepared himself for his end; and he died in the fifty-ninth year of his age, after a reign over England of twenty-two years and some days.

In the annals of nations, it would be difficult to find a reign less illustrious, yet more unspotted and unblemished than that of James. No prince so little enterprising and so inoffensive, was ever so much exposed to the opposite extremes of calumny and praise; and his character has been much disputed even in the present time. It must be owned, however, that he possessed many virtues, though scarcely one of them was free from the contagion of the neighbouring vice. His generosity bordered on profusion, his learning on pedantry, his pacific disposition on pusillanimity, and his wisdom on cunning. While he imagined that

was only maintaining his own authority, he may perhaps be suspected of having somewhat encroached on the liberties of the people. His intentions were just, but more adapted to the conduct of private life, than to the government of kingdoms.

He was married to Anne of Denmark, who died in 1619, eminent neither for her vices nor her virtues; and he left only one son, Charles, then in the twenty-fifth year of his age; and one daughter, Elizabeth, married to the elector palatine.

At this period high pride of family prevailed; and great riches acquired by commerce, were rare. Civil honours, which now hold the first place, were then subordinate to the military; and the young gentry and nobility, were fond of distinguishing themselves by arms. The country life, which still prevails in England to a certain degree, was just beginning to give way to a fondness for the seducements of the city; and James discouraged as much as possible this alteration of manners. "He was wont to be very earnest," Lord Bacon tells us, "with the country gentlemen to go from London to their country seats; and sometimes he would say to them, Gentlemen, at London you are like ships in a sea, which show like nothing; but in your country villages, you are like ships in a river, which look like great things."

The amount of the king's revenue in this reign was about four hundred and fifty thousand pounds; and his ordinary disbursements are said to have exceeded this sum thirty-six thousand pounds.

CHAPTER II.

The reign of Charles I.

No sooner had Charles assumed the reins of government than he issued writs for summoning a
1625] new parliament, which, after the arrival of the princess Henrietta, whom he had espoused by proxy, assembled at Westminster. The young prince addressed them in the language of simplicity and cordiality; the commons, though aware of the expenses of

government, and that the war was undertaken in compliance with their earnest entreaties, granted a supply of one hundred and twelve thousand pounds only. The puritanical party were disgusted with the court, on account of the restraints under which they were held, and of the favour suspected to be granted to the catholics by the treaty of marriage. To the moderate supplies allowed by parliament, were tacked concessions in favour of civil liberty; and Charles, who had imbibed high ideas of monarchical power, and of the prerogative of the crown, could ill brook any encroachments on his authority, or any want of attention to his reasonable demands.

Though he condescended to employ entreaties with the parliament, in order to obtain the necessary aid, the commons remained inexorable; and a new discovery inflamed them against the court and the duke of Buckingham. When James courted the alliance with France, he had promised to furnish Lewis with eight ships, which were to be employed against the Genoese, the allies of Spain; but when the vessels by the orders of Charles arrived at Dieppe, a strong suspicion arose that they were intended to serve against the Hugonots of Rochelle. The sailors were inflamed; and Pennington, their commander, declared, that he would rather be hanged in England for disobedience, than fight against his brother protestants in France. The whole squadron sailed immediately to the Downs, where they received new orders from Buckingham, lord Admiral, to return to Dieppe; and a report was industriously spread, that a peace had been concluded between the French king and the Hugonots. When they arrived at Dieppe, they found themselves deceived, and again returned to England, notwithstanding the magnificent offers of the French.

On this occasion the commons renewed their complaints against the growth of popery; and Charles gave a gracious and compliant answer to their remonstrances; but when he found that the parliament was resolved to grant him no supply, he used the pretence of the plague to dissolve the assembly.

To supply the want of parliamentary aids, Charles had recourse to the unconstitutional and unpopular expedient of issuing privy-seals, for borrowing money

of his subjects ; and, by means of the money thus procured, he equipped a fleet of eighty vessels, carrying ten thousand men, which sailed to Cadiz under sir Edward Cecil, lately created viscount Wimbleton. The bay was full of Spanish ships of great value ; but owing to some neglect or misconduct, and the plague breaking out among the seamen and soldiers, the fleet was obliged to return to England without effecting any thing.

Charles having failed in this enterprise, was again 1626] obliged to have recourse to a parliament ; and though he had nominated four popular leaders, to be sheriffs of their respective counties, and by that means had incapacitated them from being elected members, the ferment of opposition still continued. The commons, indeed, voted a supply ; but the passing of that vote into a law was reserved till the end of the session ; and they annexed a condition, that they should be allowed to regulate and control every part of the government which displeased them. Great dissatisfaction was expressed by Charles at this treatment ; but his urgent necessities obliged him to submit.

The duke of Buckingham, formerly obnoxious to the public, became every day more unpopular ; and the house of commons impeached him of various crimes and misdemeanors. While the commons were thus engaged, the lord-keeper, in the king's name expressly commanded the house not to meddle with Buckingham ; and Charles threatened them that if they did not furnish him with supplies, he should be obliged to try new counsels. Two members, who had been employed as managers of the impeachment, were thrown into prison. The commons immediately declared, that they would proceed no farther upon business till they had satisfaction in their privileges. Charles was obliged to release the imprisoned members ; and this attempt served only to exasperate the house still more. The commons were preparing a remonstrance against the levying of tonnage and poundage without consent of parliament, when the king, with intemperate haste, ended the session ; and they parted in mutual ill-humour.

The new counsels, with which Charles had menac-

ed the parliament, were now adopted : a commission was openly granted to compound with the catholics, and agree for dispensing with the penal laws enacted against them ; from the nobility assistance was requested, and from the city a loan required ; and the maritime towns, with the aid of the adjacent counties, were compelled to equip a certain number of ships. This is the first appearance in Charles's reign of ship-money, a mode of taxation which afterwards produced such violent discontents.

Though these irregular and unequal expedients would have given disgust in more tranquil times, yet Charles proceeded in these invidious methods with some degree of moderation, till at last, under the name of a general loan, he levied a sum equal to four subsidies. Many, however, refused these loans ; and some were even active in encouraging others to insist on their common rights and privileges. Several were thrown into prison by warrant of the council. Of these, sir Thomas Darnel, sir John Corbet, sir Walter Earl, sir John Heveningham, and sir Edmund Hampden, had spirit enough, at their own hazard and expense, to defend the public liberties, and to demand releasement, not as a favour from the court, but as a matter of right.

The question was brought to a solemn trial before the court of King's Bench ; but though sir Randolph Crew, chief justice, had been displaced as unfit for the purposes of the court, and sir Nicholas Hyde, esteemed more obsequious, had obtained that high office, yet the judges went no farther than to remand the gentlemen to prison, and to refuse the bail which was offered. The nation, indeed, was already exasperated to a very high degree, by a variety of real grievances ; and except a few courtiers and ecclesiastics, all men were dissatisfied with the measures of government, and thought that if some remedy were not speedily adopted, all hopes of preserving the freedom of the constitution might be abandoned.

Great, however, was the surprise, when Charles, though baffled in every attempt against Austria, embroiled with his own subjects, and unsupplied with any treasure except what he extorted by the most invidious and most dangerous measures, wantonly at-

tacked France, the other great kingdom in his neighbourhood. This rash action is ascribed to the counsels of Buckingham.

When Charles married by proxy the princess Henrietta, this minister and minion had been sent to France, to grace the nuptials, and conduct the new queen into England. The beauty of his person, the elegance of his manners, and the splendour of his equipage, occasioned general admiration. Encouraged by the smiles of the court, he carried his addresses to the queen of Lewis; and, after his departure, he secretly returned, and visiting the queen, was dismissed with a reproof which savoured more of kindness than of anger. The vigilance of Richelieu soon discovered this correspondence; and when the duke was making preparations for a new embassy to Paris, a message was sent him, that his presence would not be agreeable. In a romantic fit of passion, he swore, "that he would see the queen in spite of all the power of France;" and from that moment, he determined to engage England in a war with that kingdom.

He first took advantage of some quarrels excited by the queen of England's attendants; and he persuaded Charles to dismiss all her French servants, contrary to the articles of the marriage-treaty. He encouraged the English ships of war and privateers to seize vessels belonging to French merchants; and these he forthwith condemned as prizes, by a sentence of the court of admiralty; but finding that these injuries produced only remonstrances, or at most reprisals, on the part of France, he resolved to second the intrigues of the duke of Soubize, and to undertake a military expedition against that kingdom.

Soubize, and his brother, the duke of Rohan, were the leaders of the Hugonot faction, and strongly solicited the assistance of Charles. Accordingly, a fleet of one hundred sail, and an army of seven thousand men, were intrusted to the command of Buckingham, but when the fleet appeared before Rochelle, the inhabitants of that city refused to admit allies of whose arrival they had received no previous information, and Buckingham sailed to the isle of Rhé, where he landed his men. He finally returned to England with the loss of two thirds of his land forces, and with no oth-

or credit than the vulgar one of courage and personal bravery.

Great discontents, as might be expected, prevailed among the English people. Their liberties were menaced; illegal taxes extorted; their commerce, which had been already injured, was totally annihilated by the French war; the military reputation of the nation had been tarnished by two unsuccessful and ill-conducted expeditions; and all these calamities were ascribed to the obstinacy of Charles, in adhering to the counsels of Buckingham, whose services and abilities by no means deserved such unlimited confidence.

In this situation of men's minds, the king and the duke dreaded the assembling of a parliament; 1628] but the money levied, or rather extorted, under colour of prerogative, had been very slowly procured, and had occasioned much ill-humour in the nation; and as it appeared dangerous to renew the experiment, and a supply was absolutely necessary, it was resolved to call a parliament. When the commons assembled, it was soon found that they were men of the same independent spirit with their predecessors, and that the resentment for past injuries was neither weakened nor forgotten. The court party did not pretend to defend the late measures, in order to procure money, except on the ground of necessity, to which the king had been reduced by the conduct of the two former parliaments; and a vote was passed, without opposition, against arbitrary imprisonments and forced loans. In return for this concession, a supply of five subsidies was voted, with which the king declared himself satisfied; and even tears of affection started in his eye, when he was informed of this liberality.

But the supply, though voted, was not immediately passed into a law; and the commons resolved to employ the interval in providing some barriers to their rights and liberties, so lately violated. They enumerated all the encroachments that had been made on their constitutional liberties, under the name of a "petition of right;" and against these grievances an eternal remedy was to be provided. The terms in which this petition was expressed, seem to have been just and reasonable, yet favourable to public freedom; but Charles, though he had given his consent to any law

for securing the rights and liberties of the people, had not expected such inroads on the prerogative, in regard to which he was a great stickler; and it was not without much difficulty, and many evasions, that the royal assent was obtained to a measure which diffused a general joy through the nation.

Nothing tended more to excuse, if not justify, the extreme rigour of the commons towards Charles, than his open encouragement and avowal of principles incompatible with a limited government. One doctor Mainwaring had preached and printed a sermon subversive of all civil liberty; and the commons impeached him for the doctrines it contained. Mainwaring was sentenced by the peers to be imprisoned during the pleasure of the house, to be fined a thousand pounds, to be suspended for three years, and to be rendered incapable of holding any ecclesiastical dignity or secular office. However, no sooner was the session ended, than Mainwaring was pardoned, and promoted to a living of considerable value, and some years after, raised to the see of St. Asaph. This action sufficiently showed the insincerity of Charles in his late concessions.

If, however, the king had been perfectly sincere in sanctioning the petition of right, it was evident that the commons would still have been dissatisfied. They continued to carry their scrutiny into every part of government; and they expressly declared, that the levying of tonnage and poundage without consent of parliament, was a palpable violation of the ancient liberties of the people, and an open infringement of the petition of right. In order to prevent the presenting of this remonstrance, the king came suddenly to the parliament, and ended the session by a prorogation.

Freed from the vexation of this assembly, Charles began to look towards foreign wars. A considerable fleet and army had been prepared for the relief of Rochelle, and Buckingham had gone to Portsmouth to hasten the sailing of the armament. Whilst at that place, one Felton, of an ardent and melancholy mind, who had served under the duke, and had retired in discontent from the army, inflamed with private resentment, and taught by a remonstrance of the commons to consider Buckingham as the cause of every

national grievance, fancied that he should do heaven acceptable service, by despatching this foe to religion and to his country. Accordingly, as the duke in a narrow passage, was engaged in conversation with colonel sir Thomas Fryar, he was on a sudden, over sir Thomas's shoulder, struck on the breast with a knife, which he pulled out, saying, "the villain has killed me," and with these words breathed his last.

No one had seen the blow, nor the person who inflicted it; but near the door was found a hat, in which were four or five lines of the remonstrance of the commons, declaring Buckingham an enemy to the kingdom; and it was readily concluded that this hat belonged to the assassin. In this confusion a person without a hat was seen walking very composedly before the door; and one crying out, "Here is the fellow who killed the duke," every body ran to ask, "which is he?" on which Felton answered, "I am he." When questioned at whose instigation he had committed the horrid deed, he replied, that no man living had credit enough with him, to have disposed him to such an action, and that believing he should perish in the attempt, his motives would appear in his hat.

Charles received the melancholy news of the death of his favourite with an unmoved countenance; but he retained, during his whole life, an affection for Buckingham's friends, and a prejudice against his enemies. Meanwhile the distress of Rochelle had risen to the utmost extremity; and the English being unable to relieve the place, the inhabitants, pressed by famine, were obliged to surrender at discretion.

Though for more than a century the duties of tonnage and poundage had been considered as
1629] the king's due, without the sanction of parliament, and had been so levied, yet Charles, now freed from the violent counsels of Buckingham, in the opening of this session, informed the commons, that he had not taken those duties as appertaining to his hereditary prerogative, but as a gift of his people, and that he had levied tonnage and poundage out of necessity, and not by any right he assumed. This concession gave a temporary satisfaction; but the commons could not be pleased; and as soon as they had obtained one

point, they immediately found another to contend for. Matters of religion now formed the only grievance to which, in their opinion, they had not applied a sufficient remedy by their petition of right. The present house of commons, like all the preceding, in the present and two former reigns, was governed by the puritanical party; and they thought that they could not better serve their cause, than by stigmatizing and punishing the followers of Arminius, some of whom, by the indulgence of James and Charles, had attained the highest preferments in the hierarchy. Laude, Neile, Montague, and other bishops, who were the chief supporters of episcopacy, were also supposed to be tainted with Arminianism. These men were regarded by the puritans as objects of enmity and distrust, as well on account of their political as their religious principles; but they were protected by Charles, who wisely considered, that the most solid basis of his authority consisted in the support which he received from the hierarchy.

Sir John Elliot framed a remonstrance against levying tonnage and poundage without consent of parliament; but when the question was called for, Sir John Finch, the speaker, said, "that he had a command from the king to adjourn," and immediately rose and left the chair. The whole house was in an uproar; and the speaker was pushed back into the chair, and forcibly held in it, by Hollis and Valentine, till a short remonstrance was framed, and passed by acclamation. By it, papists and Arminians were declared capital enemies to the commonwealth; and those who levied, and even those who paid tonnage and poundage, were branded with the same epithet. By the king's order, the mace was taken from the table, and thus ended their proceedings; and a few days after, the parliament was dissolved. Sir Miles Hobart, sir Peter Hayman, Seldon, Coriton, Long, and Strode, were committed to prison, on account of the last tumult in the house, which was called sedition; and it was with great difficulty, and after several delays, that they obtained their release. Sir John Elliot, Hollis, and Valentine, were condemned by the court of King's Bench, for their seditious speeches and behaviour in parliament to be imprisoned during the king's pleasure, and

to pay heavy fines. These gloried in their sufferings, and would not condescend to petition the king, and express their sorrow, though promised liberty on that condition; and Elliot, happening to die while in custody, was regarded as a martyr to the liberties of England.

Charles, destitute of all regular supply, was reduced to the necessity of concluding a peace with France and Spain. No conditions were made in favour of 1630] the palatine, except that Spain promised in general to use its good offices for his restoration. The influence of these two wars on domestic affairs, and on the dispositions of the king and people, was of the utmost consequence; but they caused no alteration in the foreign interests of the kingdom, which were at this time in the most prosperous condition.

After the death of Buckingham, the queen may be considered as the chief friend and favourite of Charles, By her sense and spirit, as well as by her beauty, she justified the partiality of her husband; but her religion, to which she was much attached, increased the jealousy which prevailed against the catholics and the court.

Charles had endeavoured to gain the popular leaders, by conferring offices upon them; but the views of the king were so repugnant to those of the puritans, that the leaders whom he gained, lost from that moment all influence with their party. This was the case with sir Thomas Wentworth, whom the king had afterwards created earl of Strafford, made president of the council of York, and deputy of Ireland, and who was regarded as his chief-minister and counsellor. By his eminent talents and abilities, Strafford merited all the confidence which his master reposed in him; but as he now employed all his counsels to support the prerogative, which he had formerly endeavoured to diminish, he was detested by the puritans. In all ecclesiastical affairs, Laud, bishop of London, had the greatest influence over the king. He was a man of virtue and talents; but he wanted prudence, and a flexibility of character, to open a way through difficulties and opposition. His whole study was to exalt the dignity of the priesthood; but he weakly imagined, that this would be best effected by the introduction

of new ceremonies and observances, and a strict regard to the external forms of religion; and the discontented puritans affected to consider the church of England as relapsing fast into Romish superstition. Certain, however, it is, that Laud magnified, on every occasion, the regal authority, and treated with disdain all pretensions to a free constitution.

Charles issued a proclamation, declaring, that "though his majesty has shown, by frequent meetings with his people, his love to the use of parliaments; yet the late abuse having, for the present, driven him unwillingly out of that course, he will account it presumption for any one to prescribe to him any time for the calling of that assembly." This was generally considered as a declaration, that Charles did not intend to summon any more parliaments; and every measure of the king's tended to confirm this suspicion, so disagreeable to the people.

Tonnage and poundage continued to be levied by the royal authority alone; and the king had recourse to various unconstitutional expedients of raising money by virtue of his prerogative, in every possible way, contrary not only to the rights of the people, but in many instances also in direct opposition to their general feelings and prejudices. The severities of the star-chamber and high commission court were revived, with all their force and malignity; and being exercised against those who were the champions of freedom, and who triumphed in their sufferings, the government became still more odious. Prynne, a barrister, having written a book, intituled *Histrio-Mastix*, in which he censured not only stage-plays, music, and dancing, but also hunting, public festivals, Christmas-keeping, bonfires, and May-poles, was indicted in the star-chamber as a libeller, merely because the king and queen frequented the theatres, and the queen sometimes acted a part in pastorals and interludes represented at court. The star-chamber sentenced him to lose both his ears, to stand in the pillory, to pay a fine of five thousand pounds, and to be imprisoned during life. This man was a champion among the puritans; and it was probably with a view of mortifying that sect, that he was condemned to such a severe and ignominious punishment.

Charles made a journey to Scotland, attended by the court, in order to hold a parliament there, and to pass through the ceremony of his coronation. After his return, on the death of archbishop Abbot, he conferred the see of Canterbury on Laud, and that of London on Juxton, a person of great integrity, mildness, and humanity.

Ship-money was now levied by virtue of the prerogative; and though the amount of the whole tax little exceeded two hundred thousand pounds, and was equally assessed, and entirely expended on the navy, yet as it was wholly arbitrary, the discontents it excited, and the irregular means by which it was enforced, produced the most important consequences. The good effects of a navy, however, were soon apparent. A fleet of sixty sail attacked the herring fisheries of the Dutch, who consented to pay thirty thousand pounds for a license for one year; and a squadron was sent against Sallee, and destroyed that receptacle of pirates, by whom the English commerce, and even the English coasts, had been long infested.

Burton, a divine, and Bastwick, a physician, were tried in the star-chamber for seditious and schismatical libels, and condemned to the same punishment as Prynne. The rigours of the star-chamber, which had increased in severity since the promotion of Laud, induced the leaders of the puritans to endeavour to ship themselves off for America, where others of their sect had laid the foundation of a free government; but the council, dreading the consequences of a disaffected colony, a proclamation was issued to prevent their sailing; and thus sir Arthur Haselrig, John Hampden, John Pym, and Oliver Cromwell, were detained in England, after having embarked on board of vessels in the river Thames, for the purpose of abandoning their native country for ever.

It would be impossible, in this short work, to enter into a detail of the various means employed for abridging or destroying the few remaining liberties of the people. It may be sufficient to observe, that the unconstitutional acts of Charles, and the oppression which was universally felt, produced murmurs and complaints, and at length resistance.

John Hampden, who had been detained in England

against his will, has deserved well of his country for the bold stand which he made in defence of its laws and liberties. Rather than tamely submit to so illegal an imposition as the levying of ship money, he resolved to abide the event of a legal prosecution, though the sum in which he was rated did not exceed twenty shillings. The case was argued during twelve days, in the exchequer-chamber, before all the judges of England; and the attention of the nation was strongly excited to every circumstance of this celebrated trial. The event was easily foreseen; the prejudiced judges, with the exception of four of them, gave sentence in favour of the crown. Hampden, however, obtained by the trial the end for which he had generously sacrificed his safety and his quiet: the people were roused from their lethargy, and became fully sensible of the danger to which their liberties were exposed.

In this state of discontent and despondency, Charles attempted to introduce episcopacy into Scotland; and by this attempt, he alienated the affections of his Scottish subjects, and threw both kingdoms into a flame. Against the combination of the Scots, who were contending for what they considered as dearer to them than life, the king had nothing to oppose but 1638] a proclamation. This was instantly encountered by a public protestation; and the insurrection which had been advancing by a gradual and slow progress, now blazed up at once. No disorder, however, attended it. On the contrary, a new order immediately took place. Four *tables*, as they were called, were formed in Edinburgh. One consisted of nobility, another of gentry, a third of ministers, and a fourth of burgesses. In the hands of the four tables the whole authority of the kingdom was placed; and among the first acts of their government was the production of the COVENANT.

This covenant consisted, first of a renunciation of popery, formerly signed by James in his youth; and this was followed by a bond of union, by which the subscribers obliged themselves to resist religious innovations, and to defend each other against all opposition whatever. People of every rank and condition hastened to sign this covenant; and so general was the

contagion, that it seized the very ministers and counsellors of the king.

Charles was now willing entirely to abolish the canons, the liturgy, and the high commission court; and he gave authority to summon first an assembly, then a parliament, where every national grievance should be redressed; but he wished on any terms to retain episcopacy in the church of Scotland. The covenanters saw that it would be necessary to retain their religious tenets by military force; and the Dutch and French, who sought occasion for revenge, on account of a former misunderstanding, secretly fomented the commotions in Scotland, and supplied the covenanters with money and arms. The principal resource, however, of the Scottish malcontents, was in their own vigour and abilities. The earl of Argyle became the chief leader of the party; and Leslie, a soldier of experience and merit, was intrusted with the command of their forces.

Notwithstanding Charles's aversion to sanguinary measures, his attachment to the hierarchy prevailed; and he equipped a fleet, and levied a considerable army, which he joined himself at Berwick. Dreading, however, the consequences of a defeat, he suddenly concluded a peace, by which it was stipulated, that he should withdraw his fleet and army, that the Scots should dismiss their forces, that the king's authority should be acknowledged, and that a general assembly and a parliament should be immediately convoked in order to compose all differences.

When the assembly met, they voted episcopacy to be unlawful in the church of Scotland: Charles was only willing to allow it to be contrary to the constitutions of the church. They stigmatized the liturgy and canons as popish: he agreed simply to abolish them. They denominated the high commission tyranny: he was content to set it aside. The parliament, which sat after the assembly, advanced pretensions which tended to diminish the civil power of the monarch; and they were proceeding to ratify the acts of the assembly, when they were prorogued by the order of Charles. And on account of these claims, which might have been foreseen, the war was renewed with great advantages on the side of the covenanters, and disadvantageous on that of the king.

The covenanters, when they dismissed their troops, had cautiously warned them to be ready at a moment's notice; and the religious zeal with which they were [1640] inspired, made them fly to their standards as soon as summoned; but the king with great difficulty, drew together an army; which he soon discovered that he was unable to support. Charles, therefore, found himself under the necessity of calling a parliament, after an intermission of eleven years; but, after the king had tried many irregular methods of taxation, and after multiplied disgusts given to the puritans, who sympathised with their discontented brethren in Scotland; above all, when he considered the spirit with which former parliaments had been actuated, he could feel little confidence in a measure which his necessities had obliged him to adopt. Instead of supplies, he was assailed with murmurs and complaints. Charles, finding that ship-money in particular gave great alarm and disgust, declared that he never intended to make a constant revenue of it, and that all the money levied had been faithfully applied; and he offered a total renunciation of that obnoxious claim, by any law which the commons might think proper to frame. In return, he only asked a supply of twelve subsidies, about six hundred thousand pounds; and that payable in three years.

To the partisans of the court, who urged a reasonable confidence in the king, and a supply of his present wants, the popular leaders replied, that it was the ancient practice of parliament to give grievances the precedency of supply; and that by bargaining for the remission of an unconstitutional duty, they would in a manner ratify the authority by which it had been levied. These reasons, joined to so many causes of ill-humour, produced their effect on the majority; and some affirmed, that the amount of twelve subsidies was a greater sum than could be found in all England. Such were the happy ignorance and inexperience of those times, in regard to taxation!

The king, seeing that the same principles still prevailed, which had occasioned him so much disturbance in the former parliaments, and being informed that a vote was about to pass, which would blast his revenue
ship-money, without allowing him any compensa-

tion in return, formed the hasty resolution of dissolving the assembly, a measure of which he soon after heartily repented, and for which he was severely blamed.

Charles, disappointed of parliamentary subsidies, was obliged to have recourse again to his usual expedients; and new exactions and acts of assumed authority, served only to increase the general discontent. With some difficulty, he collected sufficient means for marching his army, consisting of nineteen thousand foot, and two thousand horse, under the earls of Northumberland and Strafford, and lord Conway. The Scottish army, which was somewhat superior, had already entered England, as they pretended, with no other view than to obtain access to the king's presence, and to lay their humble petition at his feet. At Newburn upon Tyne, a detachment under Conway seemed to dispute the passage of that river. The Scots first entreated them not to stop them in their march to their gracious sovereign; and then attacked them with great bravery, killed several, and chased the remainder from their ground. Such a panic then seized the whole English army, that the forces at Newcastle fled immediately to Durham, and afterwards into Yorkshire.

The Scots took possession of Newcastle; and, in order to prevent their advancing upon him, the king agreed to a treaty, and named sixteen English noblemen, who were all popular men, to meet eleven Scottish commissioners at Rippon.

An address arrived from the city of London, petitioning for a parliament; and Charles, in despair of being able to stem the torrent, at last determined to yield to it, and declared that it was his wish to meet the representatives of his people. As many difficulties occurred in the negotiation with the Scots, it was proposed, likewise to transfer the treaty from Rippon to London, a proposal willingly embraced by the commissioners of that nation, who were sure of treating with advantage, in a place where the king would have more enemies and they more friends.

The causes of disgust which, for more than thirty years, had been multiplying in England, were now arrived at full maturity. No sooner had the house of

1640] commons assembled, than they impeached Strafford, who had incurred the resentment of the three kingdoms, by different services rendered to his unpopular master. Pym enumerated all the grievances under which the nation laboured; and after several hours spent in invective or debate, the impeachment of Strafford was voted; and Pym was chosen to carry it up to the lords. Strafford, who had just entered the house of peers, was immediately ordered into custody, with symptoms of violent prejudice in his judges, as well as in his prosecutors.

An impeachment of high-treason was also voted against Laud, who was committed to custody; and the lord-keeper Finch, and secretary Windebank, were charged with the same crime; but these ministers, conscious of their danger, escaped to the Continent. In short, all the officers and servants of the crown, who had been guilty of any obnoxious or oppressive measure, were called upon to answer for their conduct; and even the judges, who had given their vote against Hampden, in the trial of ship-money, were accused before the peers, and obliged to find security for their appearance.

Thus, in a short time, the whole sovereign power was transferred to the commons; and this was the time when genius and talents, freed from the restraint of authority, began to display themselves. Pym, Hampden, St. John, Hollis, and Vane, greatly distinguished themselves by their various endowments; and even men of more moderate talents, and of different principles, caught a portion of the same spirit from the situation in which they were placed.

The harangues of members, now first published, kept alive the discontents against the king's administration; and the sentence against Prynne, Bastwick, and Burton, being reversed by parliament, these writers were again turned loose upon the public, and increased the general ferment.

From necessity, the king remained entirely passive during these violent proceedings. "You have taken the whole machine of government to pieces," said Charles, in a speech to parliament; "a practice frequent with skilful artists, when they desire to clean the wheels from any rust which may have grown upon

them. The engine," continued he, "may again be restored to its former use and motions, provided it be put up entire, so as not a pin of it be wanting." But this was far from the intention of the commons, who, like all violent reformers, destroyed the whole machine, instead of removing only such parts as might justly be deemed superfluous and injurious.

The commons, besides overawing their opponents, thought it necessary to encourage their friends and adherents; and with this view, they voted the Scots a subsistence of eight hundred and fifty pounds a-day, and St. Antholine's church was assigned them for their devotions, where their chaplains began to practise the presbyterian form of worship, to which multitudes of all ranks resorted. The most effectual expedient for procuring the favour of the zealous Scots, was the promotion of the presbyterian discipline and worship throughout England; and to this innovation the popular leaders among the commons, as well as their more devoted partisans, were sufficiently inclined.

Petitions against the church were framed in different parts of the kingdom; and a bill was introduced, prohibiting the clergy from holding any civil office, and of course depriving the bishops of a seat in the house of peers. This bill, however, was rejected in the upper house by a great majority; but the partisans, far from being discouraged by this opposition, immediately brought in another bill for the total abolition of episcopacy, though they thought proper to suffer it to sleep till a more favourable opportunity.

The commons next issued orders for demolishing all images, altars, and crucifixes; and so great was the abhorrence against the latter, that some of the most zealous would not suffer one piece of wood or stone to lie over another at right angles. Most of the established ceremonies of religious worship, and the ordinary vestments of its ministers were considered as savouring of popery; and the professors of that religion, in particular, were treated with the utmost harshness and indignity, from which the queen mother, who had been obliged by some court intrigues to retire to England, and even the queen herself, were not exempt.

Charles, finding by experience the ill effects of his

arbitrary measures, now endeavoured to regain the confidence of his people, by concessions and a conformity to their inclinations. He passed a bill, by which the right of granting the duties of tonnage and poundage was asserted as belonging to the commons alone; and with some difficulty he consented to a law for triennial parliaments, which was clogged with such conditions, that the legitimate power of a king was reduced almost to a shadow. A change of ministers, as well as of measures, was also resolved on; and in one day several new privy-counsellors were sworn, all of the popular party.

The end on which the king was most intent in changing his ministers was, to save the life of the earl of Strafford; but the impeachment of that unfortunate nobleman was pushed on with the utmost vigour; and, after long and solemn preparations, was brought to a final issue. Twenty-eight articles were exhibited against him; but though four months had been employed by the managers, and all Strafford's answers were extemporaneous, it appears from comparison, 1641] that he was not only guiltless of treason, but in some degree free from censure, if we make allowance for human infirmities exposed to such difficult circumstances. The accusation and defence lasted eighteen days, during which Strafford conducted himself with a degree of firmness, moderation, and wisdom, that extorted the admiration of his most bitter enemies; but the commons were determined to convict him; and therefore on the most incompetent evidence, or rather against usual legal evidence, the bill of attainder passed with no greater opposition than that of fifty-nine votes.

After the bill had passed the commons, the puritanical pulpits resounded with the necessity of executing justice on great delinquents; about six thousand armed men surrounded the houses of parliament; and the populace, worked up to a degree of frenzy by their leaders, flocked round Whitehall, where the king resided, and accompanied their demands against Strafford with the most open menaces.

About eighty peers had constantly attended Strafford's trial; but such were the apprehensions of the popular tumults, that only forty-five were present when the

bill of attainder was brought into the upper house; yet of these, nineteen had the courage to vote against it. On whichever side the king cast his eyes, he saw no resource or security. All his servants, consulting their own safety, rather than their master's honour, declined to interpose their advice between him and his parliament; and the queen, terrified with the appearance of so great a danger, pressed him to satisfy his people in this demand. Juxton alone, whose courage was not inferior to his other virtues, counselled the king not to act contrary to his conscience.

Strafford, hearing of the irresolution and anxiety of Charles, wrote to the king, and with a noble effort of magnanimity, entreated him, for the sake of public peace, to put an end to his unfortunate, however innocent life, and to quiet the tumultuous populace, by granting the request for which they were so importunate. "In this," added he, "my consent will more acquit you to God than all the world can do besides. To a willing man there is no injury."

After suffering the most agonizing conflicts, Charles at last granted a commission to four noblemen to give his assent to the bill; and he also empowered them at the same time, to sanction a bill which was still more fatal to his interests, and by which the parliament could neither be adjourned nor dissolved without their own consent.

Secretary Carleton was sent by the king to inform Strafford of the final result; and the unhappy earl at first appeared surprised; but soon collecting his native courage, he prepared for the fatal event, which was to take place after an interval of three days. During this period, Charles endeavoured to obtain from the parliament a mitigation of his sentence, or at least some delay, but was refused both requests.

Strafford, in passing from his apartments to Tower-hill, where the scaffold was erected, stopped under Land's windows, and entreated the assistance of his prayers. The aged primate, dissolved in tears, pronounced a tender blessing on his departing friend, and sunk into the arms of his attendants. Strafford, however, still superior to his fate, passed on with an elated countenance, and an air of dignity; and his mind maintained its unbroken resolution amidst the terrors

of death, and the unfeeling exultations of his misguided enemies. His speech on the scaffold was replete with fortitude and christian hope, and at one blow he was launched into eternity.

Thus perished, in the forty-ninth year of his age, one of the most eminent personages that has appeared in England, and the most faithful of the adherents of Charles; but his death was so far from producing that calm which the king had expected from the sacrifice, that the commons renewed their claims, extorted an abolition of the high commission and star-chamber courts, and remedied various other abuses which militated against the principles of constitutional freedom.

During this busy period, the princess Mary had been married to William, prince of Orange, with the approbation of parliament. A small committee of both houses was appointed to attend the king into Scotland, which he had resolved to visit; and Charles, despoiled in England of a considerable part of his authority, arrived in Scotland only to abdicate the small share which remained to him in that kingdom.

Charles, unable to resist, had been obliged to yield to the Irish, as well as to the Scottish and English parliaments; and the commons of England, jealous of a standing army in Ireland, entirely attached to the king, prevailed on his majesty, contrary to his own judgment, to disband it.

Though the animosity of the Irish against the English nation appeared to be extinguished, they were no sooner freed from the dread of a military force, than a gentleman, called Roger More, formed the project of expelling the English, and asserting the independence of his native country. This man maintained a close correspondence with lord Maguire and sir Phelim O'Neale, the most powerful of the old Irish; and he secretly went from chieftain to chieftain, and roused up every latent principle of discontent. The reasons of More engaged all the heads of the native Irish in the conspiracy. The insurrection became general; and a massacre of the English commenced, in which, when it took place, neither age, sex, nor condition, was spared. The old, the young, the vigorous, and the infirm, underwent a like fate, and were confounded in one common ruin. In vain was recourse had to rela-

tions or friends; the dearest ties were torn asunder without pity or remorse; and death was dealt by that hand, from which protection was implored and expected.

Death, however, was the slightest punishment inflicted by the Irish. All the tortures which wanton cruelty could devise, all the lingering pains of body, and anguish of mind, which malicious ingenuity could invent, were now put in practice; and the generous nature of More was shocked at the recital of such enormous cruelties; but found that his authority, though sufficient to excite the Irish to an insurrection, was unable to restrain their inhumanity.

The saving of Dublin alone preserved in Ireland the remains of the English name. The gates of that city, though timorously opened, received the wretched supplicants, and presented to the view a scene of human misery beyond description. Diseases of unknown name and species, derived from their multiplied distresses, seized many, and put a period to their lives; others, having now leisure to reflect on their severe loss of friends and fortune, cursed that being which they had preserved.

Charles found himself obliged in this exigency to have recourse to parliament; but that assembly manifested the same opposition to the king in which they had separated; and the increasing of their own authority, and the diminishing of the regal power, were the objects still pursued. By assuming the total management of the war in Ireland, they deprived the crown of its executive power; and it was even roundly insinuated, that the pernicious counsels by which Charles had been guided, had given rise to the popish rebellion.

To render the attack on royalty more systematic, the commons framed a general remonstrance of the state of the nation, comprising every real or supposed grievance, from the accession of Charles; and this was published without being carried up to the house of peers for their assent and concurrence.

This violent measure extremely agitated the sober and reflecting; and Charles immediately published an answer to the remonstrance, in which he made the warmest protestations of his sincere attachment to the

established religion, expatiated with truth on the great concessions he had lately made in favour of civil liberty, and complained of the reproaches with which his person and government were attacked; but the ears of the people were prejudiced against him, and nothing he could offer appeared to them a sufficient apology for his former misconduct.

The commons resumed their encroachments; and every measure pursued by them showed their determined resolution to reform the whole fabric of civil and religious government. The majority of the peers, of course, adhered to the king, and saw the depression of their own order in the usurpations on the crown; but some of them, finding their credit high with the nation, ventured to encourage those popular disorders, which they vainly imagined they could hereafter regulate and control.

The pulpits resounded with the dangers which threatened religion; and the populace crowded round Whitehall, and threw out menaces against Charles himself. Several gentlemen now offered their services to the king; and between them and the rabble frequent skirmishes took place. By way of reproach, these gentlemen gave the mobility the appellation of *Roundheads*, on account of the short cropt hair which they wore; and the latter retorted by calling them *Cavaliers*. Thus the nation, already sufficiently divided by religious and civil disputes, was supplied with party names, under which the factious might rendezvous and signalize their mutual hatred.

Williams, archbishop of York, having been abused by the populace, hastily called a meeting of his brethren, and prevailed on them to state in an address to the king, that though they had an undoubted right to sit in parliament, they could no longer attend with safety, and therefore protested against all laws which should be made during their absence. This ill-timed protestation afforded an opportunity of joy and triumph to the commons. An impeachment of high-treason was immediately sent up against the bishops, as endeavouring to invalidate the authority of the legislature; and, in consequence, they were sequestered from parliament, and committed to custody.

A few days after, Charles was betrayed into a very

fatal act of indiscretion, to which all the ensuing disorders and civil wars ought immediately and directly be ascribed. Imputing the increasing insolence of the commons to his too great facility, he was advised to exert the vigour of a sovereign, and punish the daring usurpations of his subjects. Accordingly, Herbert, attorney-general, appeared in the house of peers, and, in his majesty's name, entered an accusation of high-treason against lord Kimbolton, and five commoners, Hollis, Haselrig, Hampden, Pym, and Strode, for having endeavoured to subvert the fundamental laws and government of the kingdom, and to alienate the affections of the people. A serjeant-at-arms, in the king's name, demanded of the house the five members; and being sent back without any positive answer, Charles resolved next day to go in person to the house, and see his orders executed.

The members, informed of the design, had time to withdraw, a moment before the king entered, who, leaving his retinue at the door, advanced alone through the lobby; and the speaker withdrawing, his majesty took possession of the chair. The king told the house that he must have the accused persons produced, but that he would proceed against them in a fair and legal way. The commons were in the utmost disorder; and when Charles was departing, some members cried aloud "privilege! privilege!" and the house immediately adjourned till next day.

The same evening, the accused members removed into the city; and the citizens were the whole night under arms. Next morning, Charles ordered the lord-mayor to summon a common-council, which he attended himself, and told them, that he had accused certain men of high-treason, against whom he would proceed in a legal way, and, therefore, presumed that they would not meet with protection in the city. After many gracious expressions, he left the hall without receiving the applause which he expected; and, in passing through the streets, he heard the cry of "privilege of parliament," resounding from all quarters.

The king, apprehensive of personal danger, retired to Hampton-court, overwhelmed with grief, shame, and remorse. Fully sensible of his imprudence, he

wished to waive all thoughts of a prosecution, and offered any reparation to the house for the breach of privilege, of which, he acknowledged, they had reason to complain. The parliament, however, were resolved to accept of no satisfaction.

Hitherto a great majority of the lords had adhered to the king, but they now yielded to the torrent; and the pressing bill, with its preamble, and the bill against bishops voting in parliament, were now passed. The queen prevailed with Charles to give his assent to these bills, in hopes of appeasing for a time the rage of the people, and of gaining for her an opportunity of withdrawing into Holland.

These concessions, however, only paved the way for more demands; and the parliament proceeded with hasty steps to monopolize all the legislative and executive power. That his consent to the militia-bill might not be extorted by violence, the king retired to York, attended by his two sons. Here he found a zeal and attachment to which he had not been lately accustomed; and from all parts of England, the chief nobility and gentry offered their allegiance, and exhorted him to save himself and them from the slavery with which they were threatened.

Each party now wished to throw on the other the odium of commencing a civil war; and while both prepared for an event which they deemed inevitable, the war of the pen preceded that of the sword, and daily sharpened the humours of the opposite parties. Here Charles had a double advantage. Not only his cause was now unquestionably the best; but it was defended by lord Falkland, who had accepted the office of secretary, and who adorned the purest virtue with the richest gifts of nature, and the most valuable acquisitions of learning.

It was evident, however, that keener weapons than manifestoes, remonstrances, and declarations, must determine the dispute. To the ordinance of the parliament concerning the militia, the king opposed his commissions of array; and the counties obeyed the one or the other, according as they stood affected. Hull contained a large magazine of arms; and it being suspected that sir John Hotham, the governor, was not much inclined to the parliament, the king presented

himself before the place, in hopes of quietly obtaining possession of it. The governor, however, shut the gates, and refused to admit the king with only twenty attendants. Charles immediately proclaimed him a traitor; but the parliament justified and applauded the action.

Both sides now levied troops with the utmost activity. The parliamentary army was given to the earl of Essex, and in London no less than four thousand persons enlisted in it in one day. The splendour of nobility, however, with which the king was surrounded, much eclipsed the appearance at Westminster. Lord-keeper Littleton, and above forty peers of the first rank, attended Charles; while the house of lords seldom consisted of more than sixteen members. The parliament, in order that they might reduce the king to despair of a compromise, sent him their demands in nineteen propositions; but they appeared so extravagant, that Charles replied, "Should I grant these demands, I may be waited on bare-headed; the title of majesty may be continued to me; but as to true and real power, I should remain but the outside, but the picture, but the sign of a king." War on any terms seemed to the king and his counsellors preferable to such ignominious conditions; and, therefore, collecting some forces, he advanced southward, and at Nottingham erected the royal standard, the open signal of civil war.

When two names so sacred in the English constitution as those of KING and PARLIAMENT were set in opposition, it is no wonder that the people, divided in their choice, were agitated with the most violent animosities and factions. The nobility and more considerable gentry, dreading a total subversion of order, generally enlisted themselves in defence of the king; while most of the corporations, as being republican in their principles of government, took part with the parliament.

Never was a quarrel more unequal, than seemed at first that between the contending parties; almost every advantage lay on the side of the parliament, which had seized the king's revenues, and converted the supplies to their own use; and the torrent of general affection ran also to the parliament. The king's adher-

ents were stigmatized with the epithets of *wicked* and *malignant*; while their adversaries were denominated the *godly* and *well-affected*.

The low condition in which the king appeared at Nottingham, where his infantry, besides the trained bands of the county, did not exceed three hundred, and his cavalry eight hundred, confirmed the contempt of the parliament. Their forces stationed at Northampton consisted of above six thousand men, well armed and appointed; and had these troops advanced upon the king, they must soon have dissipated the small force which Charles had assembled; but it was probably hoped, that the royalists, sensible of their feeble condition, and slender resources, would disperse of themselves, and leave their adversaries a bloodless victory.

On a message being sent by Charles, with overtures for an accommodation, the parliament demanded as a preliminary, that the king should dismiss his forces, and give up delinquents to their justice; and both parties believed, that by this message and reply, the people would be rendered fully sensible of the intentions of each.

In the mean time, Portsmouth, which had declared for the king, was obliged to surrender to the parliamentary forces; and the marquis of Hertford, whom Charles had appointed general of the western counties, and had drawn together a small army, being attacked by a considerable force under the earl of Bedford, was obliged to pass over into Wales, leaving sir Ralph Hopton, sir John Berkley, and others, with about one hundred and twenty horse, to march into Cornwall.

The parliamentary army, amounting to fifteen thousand men, under the earl of Essex, now advanced to Northampton; and the king withdrew to Shrewsbury, where he made a public declaration of his resolution to maintain the established religion, and to govern in future by the laws and customs of the kingdom. While he lay at Shrewsbury, he received the news of the first action of any consequence, which had yet taken place, and in which he was successful.

On the appearance of civil commotions in England, the princes Rupert and Maurice, sons of the unfortu-

sons palatine, and nephews of Charles, had offered their services to the king; and the former, at that time, commanded a body of horse, which had been sent to Worcester, in order to watch the motions of Essex, who was marching towards that city. A detached party, under colonel Sandys, was completely routed, and their leader killed; and this action acquired to prince Rupert that character for promptitude and courage, which he eminently displayed during the whole course of the war.

The king, now mustering his army, found it to amount to ten thousand men. The earl of Lindsey was general, prince Rupert commanded the horse, sir Jacob Astley the foot, and lord Bernard Stewart was at the head of a troop of guards, whose estates and revenue, according to lord Clarendon, were at least equal to those of all the members, who, at the commencement of the war, voted in both houses.

With this army the king left Shrewsbury, resolved to bring on an action as soon as possible. The royal army arrived in the neighbourhood of Banbury, while that of the parliament was at Keinton, only a few miles distant. Both parties advancing, they met at Edge-hill, and fought with various success. The cavalry and the right wing of the parliament army were defeated; but sir William Balfour, who commanded the reserve of Essex, perceiving the enemy in disorder and busied in plundering, attacked the king's infantry, and made a dreadful havoc. The earl of Lindsey was mortally wounded, and taken prisoner; and sir Edmund Verney, the king's standard bearer, was killed. The two armies gradually recovered their ranks, but neither of them had courage for a new attack. The earl of Essex retired to Warwick, and Charles continued his march to Oxford, the only town at his devotion.

After the royal army had been refreshed and recruited, the king advanced to Reading, from which, on the approach of a body of horse, the governor and garrison being seized with a panic, fled precipitately to London. The parliament, who had expected a bloodless victory over Charles, were now alarmed at the near approach of the royal army, and voted an address for a treaty. The king named Windsor as the

place of conference; but Essex having arrived at London, Charles attacked two regiments quartered at Brentford, beat them from that village, and took about five hundred prisoners. Loud complaints were raised against this attack, pending a negotiation; and the city, inflamed with resentment, joined its trained bands to the parliamentary army, which, by that means, was rendered much superior to that of the king, who, in consequence, judged it prudent to retire to Reading, and from thence to Oxford.

The conferences between the king and parliament had commenced without any cessation of hostilities; and it was soon found, that there was no probability
1643] of coming to an agreement. The earl of Essex, governor, consented to yield the town, on condition that he should bring off the garrison, and deliver up deserters. For this last article, so ignominious in itself, and so prejudicial to the king's interests, the governor was tried by a council of war, and condemned to lose his life, but the sentence was afterwards remitted.

In the north, lord Fairfax commanded for the parliament, and the earl of Newcastle for the king. The latter united in a league for the king, the counties of Northumberland, Cumberland, Westmoreland, and Durham, and afterwards engaged some other counties in the association. Finding that Fairfax was making some progress in Yorkshire, he advanced with a body of four thousand men, and took possession of York; and at Tadcaster he attacked the forces of the parliament, and dislodged them; but his victory was not decisive.

Sir William Waller began to distinguish himself as a parliamentary general. After taking Winchester and Chichester, he defeated lord Herbert, who had laid siege to Gloucester, with a considerable body of forces levied in Wales.

In the west, sir Bevil Granville, sir Ralph Hopton, sir Nicholas Slanning, Arundel, and Trevannion, had, at their own charges, raised an army for the king, and successively defeated the parliamentary generals, Ruthven and lord Stamford, on Bradoc Down, and at Stratton. After this success, the attention of both king and parliament was directed to the west; and the marquis of Hertford and prince Maurice having joined the

Cornish army, over-ran the county of Devon, and threatened that of Somerset. Waller advanced with a considerable force to check their progress; and the two armies met at Lansdown, near Bath, and fought a pitched battle, but without any decisive event. The gallant Granville, however, was killed in the action, and Hopton was dangerously wounded. The royalists next attempted to march eastwards, and join the king's forces at Oxford; but Waller hanging on their rear, a battle took place at Roundway-down, near Devizes, in which the parliamentary army was entirely routed and dispersed. This important victory struck the parliament with dismay, which was increased by the death of the celebrated Hampden, who fell in a skirmish at Chalgrove, in Oxfordshire. Many were the virtues and talents of this eminent man, whose valour in war equalled his eloquence in the senate, and his resolution at the bar; and Charles valued him so highly, that when he heard of his being wounded, he offered to send his own surgeon to attend him.

Essex, discouraged by this event, retired towards London; and the king, freed from this enemy, sent his army westward, under prince Rupert, who besieged and took the city of Bristol. Charles joined the camp at Bristol; and some strongly urged to march directly to London, where all was confusion and dismay, as the most likely means of rendering the royal cause successful over its adversaries; but the resolution of investing the city of Gloucester was fatally adopted.

In the beginning of the summer, a combination had been formed, by Edmund Waller, the poet, a member of the lower house, to oblige the parliament to accept of reasonable conditions, and to restore peace to the nation. For the execution of this project, he associated with him Tomkins, his brother-in-law, and Chaloner the friend of Tomkins, whose influence in the city was considerable; but intelligence of the design being conveyed to Pym, they were tried and condemned by a court martial; and Tomkins and Chaloner were executed. Waller, with much difficulty, escaped, on paying a fine of ten thousand pounds.

After relieving Gloucester, besieged by the king, Essex proceeded towards London; but when he reach-

ed Newbury, he found that the royal army already occupied the place, and that an action was unavoidable. On both sides, the battle was fought with desperate valour; but night put an end to the action, and left the victory undecided. Essex continued his march to London; and the king following, retook Reading, in which he placed a garrison. In the battle of Newbury, fell Lucius Cary, viscount Falkland, secretary to the king; a man eminent for his abilities, and for every virtue which adorns humanity. On the morning of the day on which he met his fate, he had shown more than usual care in dressing himself, and gave for a reason, that the enemy might not find his body in any slovenly indecent situation. "I am weary," he subjoined, "of the times, and foresee much misery to my country; but believe I shall be out of it ere night." He was only thirty-four years of age at the time of his death.

In the north, the influence and popularity of the earl, now created Marquis of Newcastle, had raised a considerable force for the king; but he was opposed by two men, on whom the event of the war finally depended, and who began about this time to be distinguished for their valour and military conduct. These were sir Thomas Fairfax, son of the lord of that name, and Oliver Cromwell. The former gained a considerable victory at Wakefield, and the latter at Gainsborough; but these defeats of the royalists were more than compensated by the total defeat of lord Fairfax, at Atherston Moor. After this victory, Newcastle sat down with his army before Hull; but Hotham, the former governor, having expressed an intention to favour the king's interest, had some time before been sent to London, where he and his son fell victims to the severity of the parliament.

Newcastle suffered so much by a sally of the garrison, that he was obliged to raise the siege; and about the same time, Manchester having joined Cromwell and young Fairfax, obtained a considerable victory over the royalists at Horncastle. Thus, fortune seemed to balance her favours; but the king's party still remained much superior in the north; and had it not been for the garrison of Hull, which awed Yorkshire, a conjunction of the northern forces with the army of the

south had probably enabled Charles to march directly to London, and finish the war, instead of wasting both his time and resources in the siege of Gloucester.

As the event became more doubtful, both parties sought for assistance; the parliament in Scotland, and the king in Ireland. The former easily prevailed on the Scottish covenanters to espouse their cause, by joining in a solemn league and covenant, mutually to defend each other against all opponents, and to promote their respective aims and designs; and Charles, having agreed to a cessation of hostilities in Ireland, where the English had regained the ascendancy, procured considerable bodies of troops from that kingdom.

The king, that he might make preparations for the
1644] ensuing campaign, endeavoured to avail himself of the appearance of a parliament, and summoned to Oxford all the members of either house who adhered to his interest. A great majority of the peers attended him; but the commons were not half so numerous as those who sat at Westminster. The parliament at Westminster having voted an excise on beer, wine, and other commodities, those at Oxford imitated the example, and conferred that revenue on the king; and this was the first introduction of an excise into England.

The same winter the famous Pym died; a man as much hated by one party, as respected by the other. However, he had been little studious of improving his private fortune; and the parliament, out of gratitude, discharged the debts which he had contracted.

The forces from Ireland, under the command of lord Byron, after obtaining considerable advantages in Cheshire, invested Nantwich, but were completely defeated by sir Thomas Fairfax, who, in the sequel, routed a large body of troops at Selby. Leven, the Scotch commander, having joined lord Fairfax, they sat down before York, to which the army of the royalists had retired. Hopeton was defeated by Waller at Cherrington; but prince Rupert relieved Newark, which the parliamentary forces had besieged.

The earl of Manchester having taken Lincoln, united his army to that of Leven and Fairfax; and York, though vigorously defended by Newcastle, was reduc-

ed to the last extremity, when the besiegers were alarmed by the approach of prince Rupert, at the head of twenty thousand men. The Scottish and parliamentary generals drew upon Marston Moor to give battle to the royalists; and Newcastle endeavoured to persuade the prince to wait, and leave the enemy to dissolve by their growing dissensions; but Rupert, whose martial disposition was not sufficiently tempered with prudence; rejected the advice, and led on his troops to the charge. This action was obstinately disputed, and fought with various success; but after the utmost efforts of courage by both parties, victory wholly turned on the side of the parliament. The prince's train of artillery was taken, and his whole army pushed off the field of battle.

This engagement, in which Cromwell manifested great courage and abilities, proved very fatal to the king's interest. Newcastle, disgusted at the treatment which he had received from the prince, and enraged that all his successful labours should be rendered abortive by one act of temerity, determined to leave the kingdom. He retired to the continent, where he lived till the restoration, in great necessity, and saw with indifference his opulent fortune sequestered by those who assumed the reins of government.

Prince Rupert drew off the remains of his army; and retired into Lancashire; and York surrendered to Fairfax, while Newcastle was taken by storm.

Ruthven, a Scotsman, who had been created earl of Brentford, managed the king's affairs in the south with more success. Essex and Waller marched with their combined armies towards Oxford; and the king, leaving a numerous garrison in that city, dexterously passed between the two armies, and marched towards Worcester. Waller received orders from Essex to follow him, while he himself proceeded westward in quest of prince Maurice. Waller had approached within two miles of the royal camp, when he received intelligence that the king had directed his course towards Shrewsbury; and the parliamentary general hastened by quick marches to that town; but Charles suddenly retraced his former steps, and having reinforced his army, in his turn marched out in quest of Waller. At Crupedy-bridge, near Banbury, the two

armies faced each other, with only the Cherwell running between them. Waller, attempting to pass the bridge, was repulsed; and his army, disheartened by this unexpected defeat, began to melt away by desertion. The king thought he might safely leave it, and marched westward against Essex; and having cooped him up in a narrow corner at Lestithiel, reduced him to the last extremity. Essex, Robarts, and some of the principal officers, escaped in a boat to Plymouth. Balfour, with his horse, passed the king's posts in a thick mist; but the foot under Skippon were obliged to surrender.

That the king might have less reason to exult in this advantage, the parliament opposed to him very numerous forces under Manchester, Cromwell, and Waller. Charles chose his post at Newbury, where the parliamentary armies attacked him with great vigour; and though the king's troops defended themselves with valour, they were overpowered by numbers, and night only saved them from a total defeat, and enabled them to reach Oxford.

The discordant opinions which had arisen among the parliamentary generals in the field, were now transferred to the Senate. The independents now appeared a distinct body from the presbyterians, and betrayed very different views and pretensions. Vane, Cromwell, Fiennes, and St. John, were regarded as the leaders of the former; but as a great majority in the nation were attached to the presbyterians, it was only by cunning and deceit at first, and afterwards by military violence, that the independents could entertain any hopes of success.

The parliament having passed a self-denying ordinance, by which the members of both houses were excluded from all civil and military employments, Essex, Manchester, and others, resigned their commands.

It was agreed to recruit the army to twenty-two
1645] thousand men, and sir Thomas Fairfax was appointed general; a man eminent for his courage and humanity, but of little genius except in war. Cromwell, being a member of the lower house, should have been discarded with the rest; but he was saved that political craft in which he was so eminent

an artifice, which was, doubtless, concerted between them, Fairfax requested that he might be favoured with the advice and assistance of Cromwell, for another campaign; and thus the independents prevailed by art and cunning, and bestowed the whole military authority apparently on Fairfax, but in reality on Cromwell. The former was entirely governed by the genius and sagacity of the latter, whose strokes of character were only developed by the events in which he was concerned. His extensive capacity enabled him to form the most enlarged projects, and his enterprising genius was not dismayed by the boldest and most dangerous. By the most profound dissimulation, the most oblique and refined artifice, and the semblance of the greatest moderation and simplicity, he concealed an ambitious and imperious mind, which ultimately led him to the summit of power.

Negotiations for peace were once more renewed, though with small hopes of success. Commissioners on both sides met at Uxbridge; but it was soon found impracticable to come to any amicable adjustment on the important articles of religion, the militia, and Ireland. Charles refused to abolish episcopacy; and the parliament expected that the power of the sword, and the sovereignty of Ireland, should remain in their hands.

A short time before the commencement of this treaty, archbishop Laud, after undergoing a long imprisonment, was brought to his trial for high treason, in endeavouring to subvert the fundamental laws of the kingdom. After a long trial, the commons, unable to obtain a judicial sentence, passed an ordinance for taking away the life of this aged prelate, who sunk not under the horrors of his execution. "No one," said he, "can be more willing to send me out of life, than I am to go." His head was severed from his body at one blow, which removed him to a better world.

While the king's affairs declined in England, some events took place in Scotland which seemed to promise a more prosperous issue in that kingdom. The young earl of Montrose being introduced to his majesty, was so won by the civilities and caresses of the king, that though he had been employed in the first Scottish insurrection, he devoted himself from that

time entirely to the service of Charles. Montrose, not discouraged by the defeat at Marston Moor, having obtained from the earl of Antrim, a nobleman of Ireland, a supply of eleven hundred men from that country, immediately declared himself, and entered on the career which has rendered his name immortal. Several hundreds of his countrymen soon flocked to his standard; and, with this small force, he hastened to attack lord Elcho, who lay at Perth, with an army of six thousand men. Having received the fire of the enemy, which was chiefly answered by a volley of stones, for want of arms and ammunition, he rushed among them, sword in hand, and throwing them into confusion, obtained a complete victory, with the slaughter of two thousand covenanters. Though the majority of the kingdom was attached to the covenant, yet the enterprises of Montrose were attended with the most brilliant success; and, after prevailing in many battles, he prepared himself for marching into the southern provinces, in order to put a final period to the power of the covenanters.

While the flame of war was thus rekindled in the north, it blazed out with no less fury in the south. Fairfax, or rather Cromwell, had new-modelled the parliamentary army. Regimental chaplains were in a great measure set aside; and the officers assuming the spiritual duty, united it with their military functions, and during the intervals of action, occupied themselves in sermons, prayers, and exhortations. The private soldiers, seized with the same fanaticism, mutually stimulated each other to farther advances in grace; and when they were marching to battle, the whole field resounded as well with psalms and spiritual songs, as with the instruments of military music.

At Naseby was fought, with nearly equal forces, a decisive and well-disputed action between the king and the parliament. Charles led on his main body, and displayed in this action all the conduct of a prudent general, and all the valour of a stout soldier. Fairfax and Skippon encountered him, and well supported the reputation which they had previously acquired. Cromwell also, by his prudence and valour, very materially contributed to turn the fortune of the

day. The royal infantry was totally discomfited, and Charles was obliged to quit the field, and leave the victory to the enemy. The slain on the side of the parliament, however, exceeded those of the king; but Fairfax made five hundred officers prisoners, and four thousand private men, and took all the king's artillery and ammunition.

The affairs of the royalists now declined in all quarters. Charles escaped to Oxford, where
1646] he shut himself up with the broken remains of his army. The prince of Wales retired to France, where he joined the queen; the west submitted to the arms of Fairfax and Cromwell; and the defeat of Montrose at Philip-baugh, after a series of splendid actions, seemed to seal the final destiny of the king's party.

The only resource which remained to Charles was derived from the intestine dissensions of his enemies. The presbyterians and independents fell into contests concerning the division of the spoil; and their religious and civil disputes agitated the whole nation. In the mean time, Fairfax, with a victorious army, approached to lay siege to Oxford, which must infallibly surrender. In this desperate extremity, the king embraced a measure, which had been suggested by Montreville, the French ambassador, of seeking the protection of the Scottish army, which at that time lay before Newark.

The Scottish generals and commissioners affected great surprise on the appearance of the king; and the parliament, hearing of his escape from Oxford, threatened instant death to whosoever should harbour or conceal him. The Scots, therefore, in order to justify themselves, assured the parliament, that they had entered into private understanding with his majesty. After keeping the king a prisoner for some time, to the eternal disgrace of the agents in this shameful business, they agreed to surrender him to the parliament, for £400,000 pounds, half of which was to be paid instantly; and thus the Scottish nation have been stained with the infamy of selling their king, and betraying their prince for money.

When intelligence of the final resolution of the Scots to surrender him was brought to Charles, he

was playing at chess ; and so little was he affected by the news, that he continued his game without interruption, or any appearance of discomposure. The king, being delivered by the Scots to the English commissioners, was conducted to Holdenby, in the county of Northampton, where his ancient servants were dismissed, and all communication with his friends or family was prohibited.

About this time died the earl of Essex, who, sensible of the excesses to which affairs had been carried, had resolved to conciliate a peace, and to remedy, as far as possible, all those ills to which, from mistake rather than any bad intentions, he had himself so much contributed. His death, therefore, at this juncture, was a public misfortune.

The dominion of the parliament, however, was of short duration. The presbyterians retained the superiority among the commons, but the independents predominated in the army. Some evident symptoms of disaffection having appeared among the soldiers, the parliament sent Cromwell, Ireton, and Fleetwood, to the army, to inquire into the cause of the disorders. These men were the secret authors of the discontents, which, while they pretended to appease them, they failed not to foment.

In opposition to the parliament at Wetsminster, a military parliament was formed, together with a council of the principal officers, on the model of the house of peers ; and representatives of the army were composed, by the election of two private men or inferior officers, under the title of agitators, from each troop or company. This court declared that they found only grievances in the army, and voted the conduct of parliament unsatisfactory ; and, foreseeing the result of matters, they took care to strike a blow, which at once decided the victory in their favour.

A party of five hundred horse appeared at Holdenby, under the command of Cornet Joice, who had once been a tailor, but was now an active agitator in the army. Joice came into the king's presence, armed with pistols, and told him he must immediately go along with him. "Whither ?" said his majesty. "To the army," replied Joice. "By what warrant ?" asked the king. Joice pointed to the soldiers, who were

tall, handsome, and well accoutred. "Your warrant," said Charles, smiling, "is writ in fair characters, legible, without spelling." Resistance was of course vain; and the king, stepping into his coach, was safely conducted to the army, which was hastening to its rendezvous at Triplo-heath, near Cambridge.

Fairfax himself was ignorant of this manœuvre; and it was not till the arrival of Cromwell, who had deceived the parliament by his profound dissimulation and consummate hypocrisy, that the intrigue was developed. On his arrival in the camp, he was received with loud acclamations, and was instantly invested with the supreme command.

The parliament, though at present defenceless, possessed many resources; and, therefore, Cromwell advanced upon them with the army, and arrived in a few days at St. Alban's. The parliament, conscious of their want of popularity, were reduced to despair; and the army, hoping by terror alone to effect all their purposes, halted at St. Alban's, and entered into negotiation with their masters.

The army, in their usurpations on the parliament, copied exactly the model which the parliament itself had set them, in their recent usurpations on the crown. Every day they rose in their demands; and one concession only paved the way to another still more exorbitant. At last, there being no signs of resistance, in order to save appearances, they removed at the desire of the parliament, to a greater distance from London, and fixed their head-quarters at Reading.

Charles was carried with them in all their marches, and found himself much more comfortable than at Holdenby. All his friends had access to him; and his children were once allowed to visit him, and they passed a few days at Caversham, where he resided. Cromwell, as well as the leaders of all factions, paid court to him; and so confident was the king, that all parties would at length have recourse to his lawful authority, that on several occasions he observed, "You cannot be without me; you cannot settle the nation, but by my assistance."

Charles, however, though he wished to hold the balance between the opposite parties, entertained

more hopes of accommodation with the army made the most splendid offers to Ireton and well. The latter pretended to listen to his proposal but it is probable, that he had conceived the idea of seizing the sceptre. While Cromwell, he allured the king with the hopes of an accommodation he systematically pursued his plan of humbling the parliament. A petition against some laws was presented at Westminster, by the apprentices and a numerous multitude; and the house was obliged to give up its votes. Intelligence of this tumult being conveyed to Reading, the army, under pretence of restoring order to that assembly, marched to Hounslow, where the speakers of the two houses, Manchester and Pym, having secretly retired by collusion, presented themselves with their maces, and all the ensigns of their dignity, and complained of the violence done upon them. The two speakers were received with acclamations, and conducted by a military force to Westminster; and every act which had passed during their absence was annulled, and the parliament dissolved to a regularly formed servitude.

The leaders of the army, having now established their dominion over the city and parliament, were determined to bring the king to Hampton Court; but intelligence being daily brought him of menaces threatened by the agitators, and his guards being doubled in view of rendering him uneasy in his present situation, Charles adopted the sudden and impolitic resolution of withdrawing himself; and attended only by Berkley, Ashburnham, and Legge, he privately fled to Hampton Court, and arrived next day at Thame. It was sensible, however, that he could not long remain concealed there, he imprudently put himself in the hands of Hammond, governor of the Isle of Wight, a man entirely dependant on Cromwell, by whom he was carried to Carisbrooke castle, and confined, although treated with the externals of duty and respect.

Cromwell, now freed from all anxiety in relation to the custody of the king's person, and being settled to the parliament, applied himself seriously to the reduction of those disorders in the army, which he himself had raised. He issued orders for discontinuing the meetings of the agitators; but these *levellers*, as they

called, joined in seditious remonstrances and petitions; and Cromwell, at the time of a review, seizing the ringleaders before their companions, caused one mutineer instantly to be shot, and struck such terror into the rest, that they quietly returned to discipline and duty.

Cromwell paid great deference to the counsels of Ireton, a man who had grafted the soldier on the lawyer; and the statesman on the saint; and by his suggestion, he secretly called a council of the chief officers at Windsor, where was first opened the daring design of bringing the king to condign punishment for mal-administration. This measure being resolved on, it was requisite gradually to conduct the parliament from one violence to another, till this last act of atrocious iniquity should appear inevitable. At the instigation of the independents and army, that assembly framed four proposals, to which they demanded the king's positive assent, before they would deign to treat. The first was, that he should invest the parliament with the military power for twenty years; the second, that he should recall all his proclamations and declarations against the parliament, and acknowledge that assembly to have taken arms in their just and necessary defence; the third, that he should annul all the acts, and void all the patents of peerage, which had passed the great seal, since the commencement of the civil wars; and the fourth, that he should give the two houses power to adjourn as they thought proper.

Charles, though a prisoner, regarded these pretensions as exorbitant, and desired that all the terms on both sides should be adjusted, before any concession
1648] on either was insisted on. The republicans pretended to take fire at this reply; and Cromwell, after expatiating on the valour and godliness of the army, added, "Teach them not by neglecting your own safety and that of the kingdom, in which their's too is involved, to imagine themselves betrayed, and their interests abandoned to the rage and malice of an irreconcilable enemy, whom, for your sake, they have dared to provoke. Beware, (and at these words he laid his hand on his sword,) beware lest despair cause them to seek safety by some other means than by adhering to you, who know not how to consult your own safety."

Ninety-one members, however, had still the courage to oppose this menace of Cromwell; but the majority decided, that no more addresses were to be made to the king, nor any letters or messages received from him, and that it should be treason for any one to have intercourse with him, without a permission from parliament. By this vote the king was actually dethroned; and this violent measure was supported by a declaration of the commons equally violent, in which the character of Charles was aspersed with the foulest calumnies.

Scotland, whence the king's cause had received the first fatal disaster, seemed now to promise its support and assistance. Alarmed at the subjection of parliament to the army, and the confinement of Charles, the Scots had resolved to arm forty thousand men, in support of their native prince, and secretly entered into correspondence with the English royalists, sir Marmaduke Langdale and sir Philip Musgrave, who had levied considerable forces in the north of England. Various combinations and conspiracies for the same purpose were every where forming; and seventeen ships lying at the mouth of the river declared for the king; and setting their admiral ashore, sailed over to Holland, where the prince of Wales took the command of them.

Cromwell and his military council, however, prepared themselves with vigour and conduct for defence; and while the forces were employed in all quarters, parliament having regained some share of liberty, repealed the vote for non-addressing, and five peers and ten commoners were sent to Newport in the Isle of Wight, as commissioners to treat with Charles.

From the time that the king had been a prisoner in Carisbrooke castle, he had totally neglected his person, and had suffered his beard to grow long. His hair had become almost entirely gray, either from the decline of years, or the load of sorrow with which he was oppressed. The vigour of his mind, however, was still unbroken; and alone, and unsupported, for two months, he maintained an argument against fifteen men of the greatest parts and capacity, without any advantage being obtained over him. Of all the de-

mands of the parliament, Charles refused only two; he would neither give up his friends to punishment, nor abolish episcopacy, though he was willing to temper it.

In the mean time, Cromwell, with eight thousand men, attacked and defeated the numerous armies of twenty thousand, commanded by Hamilton and Langdale, and took the former prisoner. Following up his advantage, he marched into Scotland, where he exercised the most tyrannical power, and in conjunction with those of his own party, placed all authority in the hands of the most violent anti-royalists. Colchester, after holding out for the king to the last extremity, under sir Charles Lucas and sir George Lisle, was obliged to surrender; and Fairfax, instigated by the inhuman Ireton, caused those officers to be shot.

These successes of the army had subdued all their enemies, except the helpless king and parliament; and the council of general officers, at the suggestion of Cromwell, now demanded the dissolution of that assembly, and a more equal representation in future. At the same time they advanced the troops to Windsor, and ordered the king to be removed to Hurst castle in Hampshire, where he was kept in close confinement.

The parliament, however, did not lose their courage, but set aside the remonstrances of the army, and issued orders that it should not advance nearer to London. The parliament, however, had to deal with men who would not be intimidated by words, nor retarded by any scrupulous delicacy. The generals marched the army to London, and surrounded the parliament with their hostile preparations. In this situation, the parliament had the resolution to attempt to close their treaty with the king; and after a violent debate of three days, it was carried by a majority of one hundred and twenty-nine, against eighty-three, in the house of commons, that the king's concessions were a foundation for the houses to proceed upon in the settlement of the kingdom.

Next day, however, when the commons were about to meet, colonel Pride, formerly a drayman, having surrounded the house with two regiments, forty-one

members of the presbyterian party were seized, and above one hundred and sixty more were excluded. In short, none but the most determined independents were allowed to enter, and these did not exceed the number of fifty or sixty. This invasion of the parliament commonly passed under the name of *colonel Pride's purge*. The independents instantly reversed the former vote, and declared the king's concessions unsatisfactory; they renewed the former vote of non-addresses; and committed some of the leading presbyterian members to prison.

The council of officers now took into consideration a scheme, called "the agreement of the people," which laid the basis of a republic; and, that they might complete their iniquity and fanatical extravagance, they urged on this shadow of a parliament to bring in a specific charge against their sovereign. Accordingly, a vote was passed, declaring it treason in a king to levy war against his parliament, and appointing a high court of justice to try Charles for this new-invented treason. This vote was sent up to the house of peers; and that assembly, which was in general very thinly attended, was on that day fuller than usual, and consisted of sixteen members; but without one dissenting voice, they instantly rejected the vote of the lower house, and adjourned for ten days, in hopes, by this delay, to retard the furious career of the commons.

That body, however, having assumed as a principle, which is true in theory, though false in practice, "that the people are the origin of all just power," they declared that the commons represented the people, and that their enactments have the force of laws, without the consent of king or house of peers. The ordinance for the trial of Charles Stuart was then again read, and unanimously agreed to.

Colonel Harrison, the son of a butcher, and the most furious enthusiast of the army, was despatched with a strong party to conduct the king to London; and it appears, that, at this time, his majesty expected assassination, and could not believe that they really intended to conclude their acts of violence by a public trial and execution.

All things, however, being adjusted, the high court

of justice was fully constituted. It consisted of one hundred and thirty-three persons named by the commons; but scarcely more than seventy ever sat; so difficult was it to engage men of any name or character in that atrocious measure. Cromwell, Ireton, Harrison, and the chief officers of the army, most of them of low birth, were members, together with some of the lower house, and a few citizens of London. The twelve judges were at first appointed in the number; but as they had affirmed that the proceeding was illegal, their names were struck out. Bradshaw, a lawyer, was chosen president, and Coke was appointed solicitor to the people of England.

The court sat in Westminster-hall; and the king being arraigned for levying war against the parliament, was impeached as a tyrant, traitor, and murderer. Though long detained a prisoner, and now produced as a criminal, Charles sustained the dignity of a monarch, and with great temper and force, declined the authority of the court. Three times was he brought before his judges, and as often declined their jurisdiction. On the fourth, the court having examined some witnesses, by whom it was proved that the king had appeared in arms against the forces commissioned by the parliament, they pronounced sentence against him.

In this last scene, Charles forgot not his character, either as a man or a prince. Firm and intrepid, he maintained, in each reply, the utmost perspicuity in thought and expression; mild and equable, he rose into no passion at the unusual authority assumed over him. His soul, without effort or affectation, seemed only to remain in the situation familiar to it, and to look down with contempt on all the efforts of human malice. The soldiers were brought, though with difficulty, to cry aloud for justice: "Poor souls," said the king, "for a little money they would do as much against their commanders."

Three days only were allowed the king between his sentence and execution; and this interval was passed in reading and devotion, and in conversing with the princess Elizabeth and the duke of Gloucester, who alone of his family remained in England.

The morning of the fatal day, which was the 30th

of January, 1649, Charles rose early, and calling Herbert, one of his attendants, bade him employ more than usual care in dressing him, and preparing him for such a great and joyful solemnity. Juxon, bishop of London, a man endowed with the same mild and steady virtues as his master, assisted him in his devotions, and paid the last melancholy duties to his sovereign. As he was preparing himself for the block, Juxon said, "There is, sir, but one stage more, which, though turbulent, is yet a very short one. Consider, it will soon carry you a great way: it will carry you from earth to heaven; and there you shall find, to your great joy, the prize to which you hasten, a crown of glory." "I go," replied the king, "from a corruptible to an incorruptible crown, where no disturbance can have place." At one blow his head was severed from his body by a man in a visor; and another, in a similar disguise, held up to the spectators the head streaming with blood, and cried aloud, "This is the head of a traitor!"

It is impossible to describe the grief, indignation, and astonishment, which took place throughout the nation, on this melancholy occasion. Each reproached himself either with active disloyalty, or with a too indolent defence of the royal cause. The generous Fairfax, it appears, had designed to rescue the king from the scaffold, with his own regiment; but this intention being known, he was artfully engaged by Cromwell in prayer with Harrison, till the fatal blow was struck.

The moment before his execution, Charles had said to Juxon, in an earnest and impressive manner, *Remember*; and the generals insisted with the prelate, that he should inform them of the king's meaning. Juxon told them, that the king had charged him to inculcate on his son the forgiveness of his murderers; a sentiment which in his last speech he had before declared. As a king, Charles was not free from faults; but as a man, few had ever filled the throne, who were entitled to more unqualified praise.

A few days after the consummation of this tragedy, the commons passed a vote, abolishing the house of peers as dangerous and useless, and a like vote was passed in regard to the monarchy. It was declared

high-treason to proclaim or otherwise acknowledge Charles Stuart, commonly called the prince of Wales; and the commons ordered a new great seal to be engraved, on which that assembly was represented, with a legend, "On the first year of freedom, by God's blessing restored, 1648."

CHAPTER III.

The Commonwealth.

On the death of Charles, every person had framed the model of a republic, which, how new or absurd soever, he wished to impose on his fellow citizens. 1649] The levellers insisted on an equal distribution of power and property; the millenarians, or fifth monarchy men, required that government itself should be abolished, to prepare the way for the dominion of Christ, whose second coming they suddenly expected; while the antinomians asserted, that the obligations of morality and natural law were superseded, and that the elect were guided by an internal principle more perfect and divine.

The royalists were inflamed with the highest resentment against their ignoble adversaries; the presbyterians were enraged to find that the fruits of their labours were ravished from them, by the treachery or superior cunning of their associates; and the army, the only support of the independent republican faction, was actuated by a religious frenzy, which rendered it dangerous even to its friends.

The only poise against these irregularities of action, was the great influence of Oliver Cromwell. - Hating monarchy, while a subject; despising liberty, while a citizen; he was secretly paving the way, by artifice and courage, to his own unlimited authority.

The parliament now named a council of state, consisting of thirty-eight members, to whom all addresses were made, and who digested all business before it was introduced into the house. Foreign powers, occupied in wars among themselves, had no leisure or inclination to interpose in the domestic dissen-

tions of this island; and the young king, poor and neglected, comforted himself amidst his present distresses only with the hopes of better fortune. The situation of Scotland and Ireland alone gave any inquietude to the new republic.

Argyle and his partisans had proclaimed Charles II. in Scotland; but on condition "of his good behaviour and strict observance of the covenant:" in Ireland, the duke of Ormond having contrived to assemble an army of sixteen thousand men, recovered several places from the parliament, and threatened Dublin with a siege; and the young king entertained thoughts of visiting that kingdom.

Cromwell aspired to a situation where so much glory might be won, and so much authority acquired; and, by his usual cunning, he procured from the council of state the appointment of commander in chief in that island. Many disorders, however, in England, and particularly in the army, were necessary to be composed, before he set out; but with his usual felicity he settled affairs sufficiently to allow him to undertake the expedition.

On his arrival at Dublin, he attacked and defeated the army of Ormond, whose military character in this action received some stain. He then hastened to Tredah, which was well fortified, and garrisoned with three thousand men; and having made a breach, he ordered a general assault. The town was taken sword in hand; and orders being issued to give no quarter, a cruel slaughter was made of the garrison. One person alone escaped, to be the messenger, of this universal havoc and destruction.

Cromwell pretended to retaliate, by this severe execution, the cruelty of the Irish massacre; and though he well knew that nearly the whole garrison were English, his barbarous policy had certainly the desired effect. Every town before which he presented himself, now opened its gates without offering any resistance; and the English had no other difficulties to encounter, than what arose from fatigue and the advanced season. Fluxes and contagious distempers destroyed great numbers of them; but the English garrisons of Cork, Kinsale, and other important places, deserted to him.

This desertion of the English put an end to Ormond's authority; and leaving the island, he delegated his power to Clanricarde, who found affairs too desperate to admit any remedy. Above forty thousand Irish passed into foreign service; and in the space of nine months, Cromwell had almost entirely subdued Ireland.

In the mean time, Charles being informed that he
1650] had been proclaimed king by the Scottish parliament, was at length persuaded, though reluctantly, to submit to the severe conditions annexed to his reception of the crown. To comply with these, he was chiefly induced by the account brought him of the fate of Montrose, who, with all the circumstances of rage and contumely, had been put to death by his zealous countrymen. The sentence pronounced against Montrose, was, that, after being hanged, his head should be cut off, and affixed to the prison, and that his legs and arms should be stuck up on the four chief towns in the kingdom. He told the clergy, who insulted over his fallen fortunes, that they were a miserably deluded and deluding people. "For my part," added he, "I am much prouder to have my head affixed to the place where it is sentenced to stand, than to have my picture hung in the king's bed-chamber. So far from being sorry, that my quarters are to be sent to four cities of the kingdom, I wish that I had limbs enow to be dispersed into all the cities of Christendom, there to remain as testimonies in favour of the cause for which I suffer." This sentiment, the same evening, he threw into verse; and the poem still remains, a monument of his heroic spirit, and no despicable proof of his poetic genius. With the same constancy he endured the last act of the executioner; and thus perished, in the thirty-eighth year of his age, the gallant marquis of Montrose.

Charles, in consequence of his agreement to take the covenant, and to submit to other hard conditions, landed in Scotland; but soon found himself considered as a mere pageant of state, and that the few remains of royalty which he possessed, served only to draw on him the greater indignities. As his facility in yielding to every demand gave some reason to doubt his sincerity, it was proposed that he should pass through a public humiliation, instead of being crowned as he expected.

The advance of the English army under Cromwell, could not appease nor soften the animosities among the parties in Scotland. As soon as the English parliament found that the treaty between Charles and the Scots was likely to lead to an accommodation, they prepared for war. The command in Ireland was left to Ireton; and Cromwell being declared captain-general of all the forces in England, entered Scotland with an army of sixteen thousand men.

The command of the Scottish army was given to Leslie, who entrenched himself between Edinburgh and Leith, and avoided a battle, which Cromwell tried every expedient to bring on. The latter was at length reduced to such extremities, that he had even embraced the resolution of sending all his foot and artillery to England by sea, and of breaking through, at all hazards, with his cavalry; but the madness of the Scottish ecclesiastics preserved him from this dishonour.

These enthusiasts had not only enjoined Charles to withdraw from the army, but they had purged it of four thousand malignants, as they were called, though reckoned the best soldiers in the nation; and on the faith of visions, forced their general, in spite of his remonstrances, to descend from an advantageous station upon the heights of Lamermure, near Dunbar, with a view of attacking the English in their retreat. Cromwell, seeing the enemy's camp in motion, foretold without the help of revelations, "that the Lord had delivered them into his hands." He gave orders for an immediate attack; and such was the effect of discipline, that the Scots, though double in number, were soon put to flight, and pursued with great slaughter. About three thousand were slain, and nine thousand taken prisoners; and Cromwell following up his advantage, took possession of Edinburgh and Leith. The remnant of the Scottish army fled to Stirling. The defeat of the Scots was regarded by Charles as a fortunate event, as the vanquished were now obliged to allow him more authority. Still, however, the pretesters kept aloof from the malignants.

Charles encamped at Torwood, with the town of
 1651] Stirling behind him, and cautiously adhered to
 defensive measures; but Cromwell, passing
 over the frith into Fife, posted himself in his r

and rendered it impossible for the king to keep his station. Charles, reduced to despair, embraced a resolution worthy of a young prince contending for empire. The road to England being open, where he hoped to be joined by numerous friends, he persuaded the generals to march thither; and with one consent the army, to the number of fourteen thousand men, rose from their camp, and advanced by rapid marches towards the south.

Cromwell, leaving Monk with seven thousand men to complete the reduction of Scotland, followed the king with all possible expedition. Charles found himself disappointed in his expectations of increasing his army: the Scots fell off in great numbers; the English presbyterians and the royalists were unprepared to join him; and when he arrived at Worcester, his forces were not more numerous than when he rose from his camp at Torwood.

Such is the influence of established government, that the commonwealth, though very unpopular, had sufficient influence to raise the militia of the counties; and these, united with the regular forces, enabled Cromwell to fall upon the king at Worcester with an army of thirty thousand men. The streets of that city were strewed with the dead. Hamilton, a nobleman of bravery and honour, was mortally wounded; Massey was wounded and taken prisoner; and the king himself, having given many proofs of personal valour, was obliged to fly. The whole Scottish army was either killed or taken prisoners.

By the earl of Derby's directions, Charles went to Boscobel, a lone house on the borders of Staffordshire, inhabited by one Penderell, a farmer, who, with his four brothers, served him with unshaken fidelity. Having clothed the king in a garb like their own, they led him into a neighbouring wood, and pretended to employ themselves in cutting faggots. For better concealment, he mounted an oak, where, hid among the leaves, he saw several soldiers pass by, who expressed in his hearing, their earnest wishes of finding him. At length, after escaping the frequent dangers of detection, the king embarked on board a vessel at Shoreham, in Sussex, and arrived safely at Fescamp in Normandy, after a concealment of one and forty days.

No less than forty men and women had at different times been privy to his concealment, yet all of them proved faithful to their trust.

The battle of Worcester afforded Cromwell what he called his "crowning mercy;" and he now discovered to his intimate friends his aspiring views. The unpopularity of the parliament aided the ambition of this enterprising man, and paved the way to his exaltation. Never, however, had the power of this country appeared so formidable to neighbouring nations, as at this time. Blake had raised the naval glory of England to a greater height than it had attained at any former period. In America, the Bermudas, Antigua, Virginia, and Barbadoes, were reduced; Jersey, Guernsey, Scilly, and the Isle of Man, were brought under subjection to the republic; and all the British dominions submitting, parliament turned its views to foreign enterprises.

The Dutch were the first that felt the weight of their arms. The parliament passed the famous navigation act. Letters of reprisal were granted to several merchants, who complained of injuries which they had received from the states: and above eighty Dutch ships fell into their hands, and were made prizes. The cruelties committed on the English at Amboyna, which had been suffered to sleep in oblivion for thirty years, were also urged as a ground for hostile aggression.

That they might not be unprepared for the war with 1652] which they were menaced, the states equipped a fleet of one hundred and fifty sail; and gave the command of a squadron of forty-two ships to Van Tromp, an admiral of great talents, to protect the Dutch navigation against the privateers of England. In the road of Dover, he met with Blake, who commanded an English fleet much inferior in number. Who was the aggressor in the action which ensued, it is not easy to determine; but the Dutch were defeated with the loss of one ship sunk, and another taken.

The parliament gladly seized this opportunity of commencing the war in form. Several actions now took place with various success. At length, Tromp, succeeded by De Ruyter, met near the Goodwin Sands with Blake, who, though his fleet was inferior to that of the Dutch, declined not the combat. Both sides

fought with the greatest bravery; but the advantage remained with the Dutch; and after this victory, Tromp, in a bravado, fixed a broom to his mast-head, as if resolved to sweep the seas of the English.

Great preparations were made in England to wipe
 1653] off this disgrace; and a fleet of eighty sail was fitted out, commanded by Blake, and under him by Dean and Monk. As the English lay off Portland, they descried a Dutch fleet of seventy-six vessels, sailing up the channel with three hundred merchantmen, under the command of Tromp and De Ruyter. A most furious battle commenced, and continued for three days, with the utmost rage and obstinacy; and Blake, who was victor, could scarcely be said to have gained more honour than the vanquished. Tromp made a skilful retreat, and after losing eleven ships of war, and thirty merchantmen, reached the coast of Holland.

This defeat, together with the loss which their trade sustained by the war, inclined the states to peace; but parliament did not receive their overtures in a favourable manner; and they rejoiced at the dissolution of that assembly by Cromwell, as an event likely to render their affairs more prosperous.

Cromwell, sensible that parliament entertained a jealousy of his power, which they wished to restrain, determined to anticipate their designs. A council of officers presented a remonstrance, complaining of the arrears due to the army, and demanding that a new parliament should be summoned. To this the parliament made a sharp reply; and Cromwell in a rage hastened to the house, attended by three hundred soldiers, some of whom he placed at the door, some in the lobby, and some on the stairs. He reproached the parliament for their tyranny, ambition, and oppression; and commanding the soldiers to clear the hall, he himself went out the last, and ordering the doors to be locked, departed to his lodgings at Whitehall.

Oliver Cromwell, who had by this violent measure monopolized the whole civil and military power in the kingdom, was born at Huntingdon, of a good family, though their estate was small. In the early part of his life, he was extremely dissolute and dissipated: but he was suddenly seized with the spirit of reforma-

tion, and entered into all the zeal and rigour of the puritans. His affairs being embarrassed, he took a farm at St. Ives, and applied himself to agriculture; but this expedient involved him in greater difficulties. The length of his prayers, together with the general abstraction of his mind, prevented him from paying due attention to his farm; and urged by his wants, and the religious principles he had imbibed, he had made a party with Hampden, his near kinsman, to transport himself to New-England, but was prevented by an order of council. From accident and intrigue he was chosen member for the town of Cambridge in the long parliament; but though highly gifted by nature, he was no orator; and if he had not lived in times of turbulence and disorder, it is probable that he would never have risen to eminence and distinction.

The indignation manifested by the people, on the usurpation of Cromwell, was less violent than might have been expected. Harrassed with wars and factions, men were glad to see any prospect of peace; and they considered it less ignominious to submit to a person of talents and abilities, than to a few enthusiastic hypocrites, who, under the name of a republic, had reduced them to a cruel subjection.

By the advice of his council of officers, Cromwell sent summons to one hundred and twenty-eight persons, of different towns and counties of England, to five of Scotland, and to six of Ireland. These men, who were generally low mechanics, supported by Cromwell, voted themselves a parliament; and from one of the most noted, a leather-seller in London, whose name was Praise-God Barebone, they obtained the ridiculous appellation of Barebone's parliament. Cromwell, however, soon became dissatisfied with this assembly of fanatics, who, he expected, would have been subservient to him, but who began to insist on their divine commission, and to oppose his views. In the act of drawing up a protest against their dissolution, they were interrupted by Colonel White, with a party of soldiers. White asked them what they did there? "We are seeking the Lord," said they. "Then you may go elsewhere," replied he; "for to my knowledge, he has not been here these many years."

This shadow of a parliament being dissolved, the council of officers now proposed, that the supreme authority should be vested in a single person, who should be stiled the PROTECTOR; and a new instrument of government being prepared, Cromwell was declared *protector*, and installed with great solemnity in that high office. By the plan of this new legislature, a council was appointed, which was not to exceed twenty-one, nor be fewer than thirteen persons. The protector, however, was to possess all the executive power; but the advice of the council was to be taken on every important occasion. A parliament was to be summoned every three years, and allowed to sit five months, without adjournment, prorogation, or dissolution. The bills which they passed were to be presented to the protector for his assent; but if within twenty days that assent was not obtained, they were to become laws by the authority of parliament alone. A standing army was established, and funds were assigned for its support. During the intervals of parliament, the protector and council had the power of enacting laws, which were to be valid till the next meeting of the legislative body. The protector was to enjoy his office during life; and, on his death, the council was to fill up the vacancy. The council of state, named by the instrument, were men entirely devoted to Cromwell, and not likely ever to combine against him.

Whatever may be the defects and distractions in this system of civil polity, the military force of England was exerted with vigour, conduct, and unanimity. The English fleet, commanded by Monk and Dean, after an engagement of two days, defeated the Dutch under Tromp; and in another engagement, when Blake commanded, Tromp was shot through the heart, and this decided the action. The Dutch regarded less the loss of thirty ships which were sunk and taken, than the catastrophe of their brave admiral. At length, 1654] however, a defensive league was contracted between the two republics, on terms very honourable and advantageous to England; and Cromwell, as protector, signed the treaty of pacification.

Cromwell, however, had occasion to observe the prejudices entertained against his government, by the opposition of the parliament which he had summon-

ed. The manner in which he had conducted the elections had been favourable to liberty. The small boroughs, as being most exposed to influence and corruption, had been disfranchised; and of four hundred members who represented England, two hundred and seventy were chosen by the counties. These measures, however, failed to procure him the confidence of the people; and the first business on which the parliament entered, was to discuss the pretended instrument of government, and the authority which Cromwell had assumed over the nation. Cromwell obliged the members to sign a recognition of his authority, and an engagement not to propose or consent to any alteration in the government, as settled in a single person and a parliament; but, finding that conspiracies had been entered into between the members and some malcontent officers, he hastened to dissolve this dangerous assembly.

After this, the protector exerted himself against the adherents of Charles, who had appointed a day 1655] of general rising throughout England; and in order to draw off the attention of the nation from himself, he extended his enterprises to every part of Europe. He compelled the French to comply with every proposal which he thought fit to make, and to submit to the greatest indignities.

The extensive but feeble empire of Spain in the West Indies, excited the ambition of the protector; and, in order to humble that power, he equipped two squadrons; one under Blake entered the Mediterranean, and spread terror every where. To the other, under Pen and Venables, Jamaica surrendered without a blow; and that island has ever since remained in the hands of the English, the chief acquisition which they owe to the enterprising spirit of Cromwell.

Blake being informed that a Spanish fleet of sixteen ships had taken shelter in the Canaries, sailed thither, and found them in the bay of Santa Cruz. This bay was strongly fortified; but nothing could daunt the spirit of Blake. In spite of the Spanish forts and batteries, the English admiral steered into the bay; and after a resistance of four hours, the enemy abandoned their ships, which were set on fire and consumed.

This was the last and greatest action of that gallant

officer. Being almost worn out with a dropsy and scurvy, he hastened home, that he might die in his native country; but he expired as he came within sight of land. Never was a man more sincerely respected, even by those of opposite principles. He was an inflexible republican, and the late changes were thought to be no way grateful to him; but he remarked to the seamen, "It is still our duty to fight for our country, into whose hands soever the government may fall."

The conduct of the protector in foreign affairs, though often rash, was full of vigour. The great mind of Cromwell was intent on spreading the fame of the English nation; and it was his boast, that he would render the name of an Englishman as much feared and revered as ever was that of a Roman. In his civil and domestic administration, he paid great regard both to justice and clemency. All the chief offices in the courts of judicature were filled with men of integrity; and amidst the virulence of faction, the decrees of the judges were unwarped by partiality.

Cromwell now judging that he had sufficiently established his authority, summoned another parliament; but, though he had used every art to influence the elections, he soon found that it was necessary to employ the most violent measures to procure an ascendancy in the house. He placed guards at the door, who permitted only such to enter as produced a warrant from the council. The parliament voted a renunciation of all titles in Charles Stuart, or any of his family; and colonel Jephson, in order to sound the inclinations of the house, ventured to move, that they should bestow the crown on Cromwell. When the protector afterwards affected to ask what could induce him to make such a motion; "As long," said Jephson, "as I have the honour to sit in parliament, I must follow the dictates of my own conscience, whatever offence I may be so unfortunate as to give you." "Get thee gone," said Cromwell, giving him a gentle blow on the shoulder, "get thee gone for a mad fellow as thou art."

At length, a motion in form was made by alderman Pack, one of the city members, for investing Cromwell with the royal dignity. The chief opposition came from the usual adherents of the protector, the

general officers, particularly Lambert, who had long entertained hopes of succeeding him. However, the bill was carried by a considerable majority; and a committee was appointed to reason with Cromwell, and to overcome the scruples which he pretended against such a liberal offer. The conference lasted several days; but the opposition which Cromwell dreaded was not that which came from Lambert and his adherents: it was that which he met with in his own family, and from men the most devoted to his interests. Fleetwood had married his daughter, and Desborow his sister; yet these men told him, that if he accepted of the crown, they would instantly throw up their commissions, and render it impossible for them to serve him. In short, it is said that a general mutiny of the army was justly dreaded, if this ambitious project had been carried into execution; and therefore Cromwell, after long doubt and perplexity, was at last obliged to refuse the crown. The parliament, however, gave him the power of nominating his successor, and assigned him a perpetual revenue for the payment of the fleet and army, and the support of the civil government.

The parliament was again assembled, and the protector endeavoured to maintain the appearance of a civil magistrate, by placing no guards at the door of either house; but he soon found how incompatible liberty is with a military usurpation. The commons assumed the power of readmitting those members whom the council had formerly excluded; and an incontestable majority declared themselves against the protector. Dreading combinations between the members and the malcontents in the army, Cromwell determined to dissolve the parliament without delay; and when urged by Fleetwood and others of his friends not to precipitate himself into so rash a measure, he swore by the living God that they should not sit a moment longer.

These distractions at home, however, did not render the protector inattentive to foreign affairs. The Spaniards were defeated at Dunes by the combined armies of France and England; and Dunkirk being soon after surrendered, was delivered to Cromwell. He committed the government of that important place to

Lockhart; who had married his niece, and was his ambassador at the court of France.

These successes abroad were more than counterbalanced by his inquietudes at home. The royalists and presbyterians entered into a conspiracy, which being discovered, numbers were thrown into prison, and sir Henry Slingsby and Dr. Huett were condemned to be beheaded. The army was ripe for a mutiny; and Fleetwood and his wife, who had adopted republican principles, began to estrange themselves from Cromwell. His other daughters were no less prejudiced in favour of the royal cause; and the death of Mrs. Claypole, his peculiar favourite, destroyed all his enjoyments.

All composure of mind seemed now for ever fled from the protector. He saw nothing around him but treacherous friends or enraged enemies; and death, which he had so often braved in the field, haunted him in every scene of business or repose. Every action betrayed the terrors under which he laboured. He never moved a step without guards; he wore armour under his clothes; and he seldom slept above three nights together in the same chamber.

The contagion of his mind began to affect his body. He was seized with a slow fever, which changed into a tertian ague. Dangerous symptoms soon made their appearance. Casting his eyes towards that future existence, which, though once familiar to him, had been considerably obliterated by the hurry of business, Cromwell asked Goodwin, one of his preachers, if it were true that the elect could never fall or suffer final reprobation? "Nothing more certain," replied the preacher. "Then I am safe," said the protector, "for I am sure that I was once in a state of grace."

He died on the third of September, a day which he had always considered as propitious to him, in the fifty-ninth year of his age. A violent tempest, which immediately succeeded his death, served as a subject of discourse to the vulgar; and his partisans, as well as his enemies, endeavoured, by forced inferences, to interpret this event as a confirmation of their particular prejudices.

The private conduct of Cromwell, as a son, a husband, a father, and a friend, merits praise rather than

censure; and, upon the whole, his character was a compound of all the virtues and all the vices which spring from violent ambition and wild fanaticism.

Cromwell was surrounded with so many difficulties, that it was thought he could not much longer have extended his usurped administration; but when that powerful hand was removed, which conducted the government, every one expected a sudden dissolution of the baseless fabric. Richard, his son, possessed no talents for government, and only the virtues of private life; yet the council recognized his succession. His brother Henry, who governed Ireland with popularity, insured him the obedience of that kingdom; and Monk, who was much attached to the family of Cromwell, proclaimed the new protector in Scotland. Above ninety addresses from the counties and most considerable corporations congratulated Richard
1659] on his accession; and a parliament being called, all the commons at first, without hesitation, signed an engagement not to alter the present government.

But there was another quarter from which greater dangers were justly apprehended. The most considerable officers of the army, with Fleetwood and Lambert at their head, were entering into cabals against Richard. The young protector, having neither resolution nor penetration, was prevailed on to give his consent for calling a general council of officers, who were no sooner assembled, than they voted a remonstrance, in which they lamented that *the good old cause*, as they termed it, was neglected; and they proposed, as a remedy, that the whole military power should be entrusted to some person, in whom they might all confide. The protector was justly alarmed at these movements among the officers; and some of his partisans offered to put an end to these intrigues by the death of Lambert; but Richard declared that he would not purchase power by such sanguinary measures.

The parliament was no less alarmed at these military cabals, and passed a vote, that there should be no general council of officers, without the protector's consent. This brought matters to a crisis. The officers hastened to Richard, and demanded the dissolu-

tion of the parliament. The protector wanted the resolution to deny, and possessed little ability to resist this demand; and he soon after signed his own resignation in form. Henry, the deputy of Ireland, was endowed with the same moderate disposition as his brother; and though his popularity and influence in that country were very considerable, he quietly resigned his authority and returned to England.

Thus fell, at once, the protectorate house of Cromwell; but, by a rare fortune, it suffered no molestation. Richard continued to possess an estate, which he had burdened with a debt contracted for the interment of his father. After the restoration, though unmolested, he travelled for some years, and then returning to England, lived to an extreme old age. He was beloved for his social virtues, and happier in tranquillity and retirement than he could have been by the applause of empty fame and the gratifications of the most successful ambition.

The council of officers, in whom the supreme authority was now lodged, agreed to revive the long parliament. The members little exceeded seventy in number; but they took care to thwart the measures of the officers; and they appointed Fleetwood lieutenant-general only during the pleasure of the house.

The conduct of the parliament gave great disgust to the general-officers, who resolved to dissolve an assembly by which they were vehemently opposed. Accordingly, Lambert drew together some troops, and intercepting the members as they came to the house, sent them home under a military escort.

The officers now found themselves again in possession of supreme power; but to save appearances, they elected twenty-three persons, called a *committee of safety*, which they pretended to invest with sovereign authority. Throughout the three kingdoms there prevailed nothing but melancholy fears of a bloody massacre to the nobility and gentry, and of perpetual servitude to the rest of the people.

But amidst these gloomy prospects, a means was preparing for the king to mount in peace the throne of his ancestors. General George Monk, to whose audence and loyalty the restoration of the monarchy chiefly to be ascribed, was the second son of an

nonourable family in Devonshire, but somewhat gone to decay. He had betaken himself, in early youth, to the profession of arms; and by his humane disposition he gained the good will of the soldiers, who usually called him *honest George Monk*. He was remarkable for his moderation; and, from the candour of his behaviour, he fell under suspicion of the royalists, and was suspended for a time. At the siege of Nantwich, he was taken prisoner by Fairfax, and sent to the Tower, where he endured, about two years, all the rigours of poverty and confinement; and it was not till after the royalists were totally subdued that he recovered his liberty.

Monk, however distressed, had always refused the most inviting offers from the parliament; but Cromwell, sensible of his merit, prevailed on him to engage in the wars against the Irish, who were considered as rebels both by the king and parliament. He afterwards fought in Scotland, and on the reduction of that kingdom, was left with the supreme command. In that capacity, he gave satisfaction both to the people and the soldiery; and foreseeing that the good will of the army might eventually be of great service to him, he cultivated their friendship with assiduity and success.

Hearing that Lambert was advancing northward, Monk sent commissioners to treat with the committee of safety; but his chief aim was to gain time, and relax the preparations of his enemies. In the mean time, the nation had fallen into anarchy. While Lambert's forces were assembling at Newcastle, Hazelrig and Morley took possession of Portsmouth for the parliament: and admiral Lawson, entering the river Thames, declared on the same side. The city of London established a kind of separate government within itself; and Fleetwood was unable to support the baseless fabric, which was every where falling to pieces.

Monk, who had passed the Tweed, though informed of the restoration of parliament, continued to advance at the head of about six thousand men. In all the counties through which he passed, the gentry flocked to him with addresses, requesting that he would assist in restoring the nation to peace and tranquillity; but he affected not to favour them

Monk and his army soon reached the metropolis. 1660] The common-council of London having refused to submit to an assessment, and declared that till a free parliament imposed taxes they would make no payment, Monk was ordered to march into the city, and seize twelve persons the most obnoxious to the parliament. With this order he immediately complied, and apprehended as many as he could of the proscribed persons; but soon reflecting that by this action he had broke through the cautious ambiguity which he had hitherto maintained, and rendered himself the tool of a parliament whose tyranny had long been odious to the nation, he wrote a letter to the house, requiring them, in the name of the citizens, soldiers, and whole commonwealth, to issue writs within a week for the filling of their assembly, and to fix the time for their own dissolution and the meeting of a new parliament. He then marched with his army into the city, and requesting the mayor to summon a common-council, he apologized for his late conduct, and desired that they might mutually plight their faith for a strict union between the city and army, in every measure which might conduce to the settlement of the commonwealth.

It would be impossible to describe the joy which this intelligence conveyed; and the funeral of the parliament was celebrated by the populace with marks of hatred and derision. The secluded members were invited by the general to enter the house, and appeared to be the majority. Votes were passed favourable to the views of Monk; and writs were issued for the immediate assembling of a new parliament.

When the parliament met, sir Harbottle Grimstone, a gentleman well affected to the king's service, was chosen speaker; and the general having sounded the inclinations of the assembly, gave directions to the president of the council to inform them, that one sir John Granville, a servant of the king, was now at the door with a letter to the commons. This intelligence excited the loudest acclamations; Granville was called in; and, without one dissenting voice, a committee was appointed to prepare an answer.

The king's declaration, which was immediately published, offered a general amnesty, with the exception

only of such persons as should be made by parliament; it promised liberty of conscience; and assured the soldiers of all their arrears, with a continuance of the same pay.

The lords, perceiving the spirit by which the kingdom, as well as the commons, was animated, hastened to reinstate themselves in their ancient authority; and the two houses attended, while the king was proclaimed with great solemnity in Palace-yard, at Whitehall, and at Temple-bar. A committee of lords and commons was despatched to invite his majesty to return, and take possession of the throne; and the king, embarking at Scheveling, landed at Dover, where he was met by Monk, whom he cordially embraced. On the 29th of May, which was also his birth-day, Charles entered London, amidst the most joyful congratulations.

CHAPTER IV.

The reign of Charles II.

WHEN Charles II. ascended the throne, he was thirty years of age. He possessed a vigorous constitution, a fine shape, a manly figure, and a graceful air; and though his features were harsh, yet his countenance was lively and engaging. No prince ever received a crown with the more cordial attachment of his subjects; and the ease and affability of his manners were well calculated to confirm this popularity.

In the choice of his ministers, the king gave great satisfaction to the nation. Sir Edward Hyde, created earl of Clarendon, was chancellor and prime-minister; the duke of Ormond, steward of the household; the earl of Southampton, high-treasurer; and sir Edward Nicholas, secretary of state. Admiral Montague, who had carried a fleet to receive his majesty, without waiting for the orders of parliament, was created earl of Sandwich; and Monk, who, without effusion of blood, by his cautious and disinterested conduct, settled the affairs of the three kingdoms, and restored

his injured sovereign to the vacant throne, was created duke of Albemarle. Into the king's council were admitted the most eminent men of the nation, without regard to former distinctions; the presbyterians, equally with the royalists, shared this honour.

All judicial proceedings, transacted in the name of the commonwealth, or protector, were ratified by a new law: and the act of indemnity passed both houses, and soon received the royal assent. The regicides, with Vane and Lambert, were alone excepted; and all who had sitten in any illegal high court of justice, were declared incapable of bearing any office in the state.

The next business was the settlement of the king's revenue. They granted him one hundred thousand pounds a-year, in lieu of the tenures of wards and liveries, which had long been considered as a grievous burden by the nobility and gentry; and they voted, that the settled revenue of the crown, for all charges, should amount to the annual sum of one million two hundred thousand pounds; but, still jealous of liberty, they scarcely assigned sufficient funds for two thirds of that sum; and thus left the care of fulfilling their engagements to the future consideration of parliament.

The next object which interested the public, was the trial and condemnation of the regicides. Harrison, Scot, Carew, Clement, Jones, Scrope, Axtel, Hacker, Coke, and Hugh Peters, suffered with the confidence of martyrs. The rest of the king's judges were reprieved.

After the parliament had sitten about two months, the king dissolved that assembly in a speech full of the most gracious expressions. The army was also disbanded; and no more troops were retained than a few guards and garrisons, about one thousand horse and four thousand foot. This, however, was the first appearance of a regular standing army, under the monarchy, in this island.

Clarendon, whose daughter, Ann Hyde, was now married to the duke of York, by his wisdom, his justice, and his prudence, equally promoted the interest of the king and the people; but his conduct in the management of ecclesiastical affairs has been cen-

ured by many. Charles having observed that presbyterianism was not a religion for a gentleman, it was resolved to restore prelacy in Scotland. Sharp, who had been commissioned by the presbyterians in Scotland to manage their interests with the king, was persuaded to abandon his party, and, as a reward for his tergiversation, was created archbishop of St. Andrews. The conduct of ecclesiastical affairs was chiefly intrusted to him; and he became extremely obnoxious to his former friends.

In England, the new parliament, laying hold of the prejudices which prevailed among the presbyterian sect, in order to eject them from their livings, required that every clergyman should be re-ordained, if he had not before received episcopal ordination; should 1662] declare his assent to every thing contained in the Book of Common Prayer; should take the oath of canonical obedience; should abjure the solemn league and covenant; and should renounce the principle of taking arms against the king, on any pretence whatsoever. This act, and others which passed about the same time, have been the best supports of the state, by joining it closely with the church. It must, however, be confessed, that by these enactments the king's promises of toleration and indulgence to tender consciences was entirely eluded or broken. About two thousand of the clergy, in one day, relinquished their cures, and sacrificed their interest to their principles.

Before the parliament rose, the court was employed in preparing for the reception of the princess Catherine of Portugal, to whom the king was betrothed; and with whom he received five hundred thousand pounds, and the two fortresses of Tangier in Africa, and Bombay in the East Indies, by way of dowry. This marriage, however, was far from proving auspicious, as the queen was never able to win the affections of her husband.

Charles, pressed by pecuniary difficulties, in order to raise money, as well as to save expenses, sold Dunkirk to France, for four hundred thousand pounds. To this measure he was advised by Clarendon. The value of this acquisition was so little understood by

the French king, that he thought he had made a hard bargain.

Charles issued a declaration, under pretence of mitigating the rigours contained in the act of uniformity; but the foundation of this measure was of a very different nature. The king, during his exile, had imbibed strong prejudices in favour of the catholic religion; and though he fluctuated during his whole reign, between irreligion, which he more openly professed, and popery, to which he retained a strong propensity, his brother the duke of York had entered with zeal into all the principles of that theological party, and by his application to business, which Charles disliked, had acquired a great ascendancy over him. On pretence of easing the protestant dissenters, they agreed upon a plan for introducing a general toleration, and giving the catholics the free exercise of their religion, at least in private houses. The parliament, however, refused their concurrence in this measure; and, in 1663] order to deprive the catholics of all hopes, the two houses agreed in a remonstrance against them. The king insisted no farther at present on this project of indulgence; and he issued a vague proclamation against jesuits and Romish priests. In return for this the commons voted him a supply of four subsidies; and this was the last time that taxes were levied in that manner.

In proportion as the king found himself established on the throne, he began to alienate himself from Clarendon, whose character was so little suited to his own. Charles's partiality for the catholics was always opposed by this minister, who, conscious of integrity and of faithful services, disdained to enter into any connexion with the royal mistresses.

The irregular pleasures of Charles, and the little regard he paid to decency in his public mistresses, could not but give offence to the nation. It was found that the virtues which he possessed were more showy than substantial; that his bounty proceeded rather from facility of disposition than generosity; that while he seemed affable to all, his heart was little susceptible of friendship; and that he secretly entertained a bad opinion of mankind, no proof that he was actuated by better motives. But what was most injurious to

the king's reputation, was the neglect of his own and his father's adherents, whom he suffered to remain in poverty and distress, aggravated by the cruel disappointment of their sanguine hopes, and by seeing favour and preferment bestowed on their most inveterate foes. - The act of indemnity and oblivion was generally denominated, and in many cases too justly, an act of indemnity to the king's enemies, and of oblivion to his friends.

The king having demanded a repeal of the triennial act, the parliament abrogated the law, and satisfied themselves with a general clause, that parliaments should not be inaugurated above three years at most. The commons likewise passed a vote that the indignities offered to the English, by the subjects of the United States, were the greatest obstructions to all foreign trade. This was the first open step towards a war with the Dutch. Charles did not confine himself to memorials and remonstrances. Sir Robert Holmes was secretly despatched with a squadron of twenty-two ships to the coast of Africa, where he expelled the Dutch from cape Corse, and seized their settlements at cape Verde and in the isle of Goree. He then sailed to America, where he possessed himself of Nova Be^lgia, since called New-York, which James the First had granted by patent to the earl of Stirling, but which had never been planted except by the Hollanders.

When the States complained of these hostile measures, the king pretended to be ignorant of Holmes's enterprise; and the Dutch, finding their applications for redress likely to be eluded, despatched de Ruyter with a fleet to retaliate on the English. De Ruyter 1664] met with no opposition in Guinea. All the new acquisitions of the English, except cape Corse, were recovered from them; and they were also dispossessed of some old settlements.

The Dutch, however, tried every expedient before they would proceed to extremities; and their measures were at that time directed by John de Witt, a minister equally eminent for ability and integrity. He caused a navy to be equipped, surpassing any that had ever before been prepared in the ports of Holland.

As soon as the intelligence arrived of de Ruyter's

1665] enterprises, Charles declared war against the States. The English fleet consisted of one hundred and fourteen sail, besides fire-ships and ketches, and was commanded by the duke of York, and under him by prince Rupert, and the Earl of Sandwich. Obdam, the Dutch admiral, had nearly an equal force, and on meeting he declined not the combat. In the heat of action; when engaged in close fight with the duke of York, Obdam's ship blew up. This accident disconcerted the Dutch, who fled towards their own coast. Tromp alone, son of the famous admiral killed in the former war, bravely sustained with his squadron the efforts of the English, and protected the rear of his countrymen. The vanquished had nineteen ships sunk or taken; the victors lost only one. In this action, the duke of York behaved with great bravery; the Earl of Falmouth, lord Muskerry, and Mr. Boyle, were killed by one shot, at his side, and covered him with their brains and gore.

The abilities of de Witt were employed in reviving the declining courage of his countrymen; and he soon remedied all the disorders occasioned by the late misfortune. The king of France, who was engaged in a defensive alliance with the States, resolved to support the Dutch in this unequal contest.

The English, however, experienced a more dreadful calamity than even that of a war. The plague had broken out in London, and carried off ninety thousand persons; and the king was obliged to summon a parliament at Oxford.

The king of France had ordered his admiral, the duke of Beaufort, to proceed from Toulon, and support his allies; and the French squadron, consisting of above forty sail, was now supposed to be entering the channel. The Dutch fleet, under the command of De Ruyter, to the number of seventy-six sail, 1666] was at sea, in order to join the French. The duke of Albemarle and prince Rupert commanded the English fleet, which did not exceed seventy-four sail. Albemarle, who despised the enemy too much, despatched prince Rupert with twenty ships to oppose the duke of Beaufort; and with the remainder, he set sail to give battle to the Dutch. (Never did a more

memorable engagement take place; whether we consider its long duration, or the desperate courage with which it was fought.

On the first day the wind blew so hard that the English could not use their lower tier of guns, and their sails and rigging were injured by the Dutch chain-shot, a new invention ascribed to de Witt; but the battle was contested till darkness parted the combatants. On the second day, during the action, sixteen fresh ships joined the Dutch fleet, while the English had not more than twenty-eight in a situation for fighting. This obliged Albemarle to retreat towards the English coast, which he did with an undaunted countenance, protesting to the earl of Ossory, son to the duke of Ormond, that he would rather blow up his ship and perish than stike to the enemy. The Dutch had come up with the English, and were about to renew the engagement, when the squadron of prince Rupert was descried, crowding all their sail to reach the scene of action. Next morning the battle began afresh, and continued with great violence till suspended by a mist. The English retired first into their own harbours.

De Ruyter now posted himself at the mouth of the Thames; but the English, under prince Rupert and Albemarle, were not long in coming to attack him. This engagement was again fierce and obstinate, and three Dutch admirals fell; but De Ruyter maintained the combat, and kept his station, till darkness put an end to the contest. Next day, finding the Dutch fleet scattered, he was obliged to submit to a retreat, which yet he conducted with so much skill as to render it equally honourable to himself as the greatest victory. Full of indignation, however, at yielding the superiority to the English, he frequently exclaimed, "My God! what a wretch I am! among so many thousand bullets, is there not one to put an end to my miserable life?" The Dutch, by the greatest exertions, saved themselves in their harbours; and the English now rode incontestable masters of the sea.

A calamity, however, happened in London, which occasioned the greatest consternation. A most dreadful fire broke out in the city, and spreading in every endeavour to check its destructive p!

consumed about four hundred streets and thirteen thousand houses. During three days and nights the fire continued to advance; and it was at last extinguished only by the blowing up of houses. Popular prejudice ascribed this calamity to the catholics; and though no proof ever appeared to authorize such a calumny, it is sanctioned by the inscription on the monument, which records the conflagration.

As the Dutch were every day becoming more formidable, Charles began to be sensible, that all the ends for which the war had been undertaken were likely to prove abortive. This induced him to make the first advances towards an accommodation, and matters were in a state of forwardness, when the king, by imprudently discontinuing his preparations, exposed England to a great affront and even to great danger.

The penetrating mind of De Witt discovered the opportunity for retrieving the honour of the States; and he embraced it. The Dutch fleet under De Ruyter, appeared in the Thames, and bursting the chain which had been drawn across the Medway, advanced as far as Upnore castle, and burnt several ships. They next sailed to Portsmouth and Plymouth, and insulted Harwich. The whole coast was in alarm; and had the French joined the Dutch fleet and invaded England, the most serious consequences might have ensued. The signing of the treaty of Breda, however, saved England from this danger; and the acquisition of New-York was the principal advantage which the English reaped from a war, in which the national character for bravery had appeared with so much lustre.

To appease the people for their disappointments, some sacrifice was necessary; and the prejudices of the nation pointed out the victims. The sale of Dunkirk, the disgrace at Chatham, and the unsuccessful conclusion of the war, were all attributed to Clarendon. The king himself, who had always revered rather than loved the chancellor, was glad to be freed from a minister who, amidst the dissolute manners of the court, maintained an inflexible dignity, and would not suffer his master's licentious pleasures to pass without reprehension. The memory of his former services could not delay his fall; and the great seal

was taken from him, and given to sir Orlando Bridgman.

The duke of York in vain exerted his interest in behalf of his father-in-law. The commons voted an impeachment against him; and Clarendon, finding that neither his innocence nor his past services were sufficient to protect him, retired into France, where he lived six years after the parliament had decreed his banishment. He employed his leisure chiefly in reducing to order the history of the civil war, for which he had before collected materials, and which is a performance that does honour to his memory.

The king's councils, which had always been negligent and fluctuating, now became actually
1670] criminal. Men, in whose honour and integrity the nation confided, were excluded from any deliberations; and the whole secret of government was intrusted to five persons, Clifford, Ashley, Buckingham, Arlington, and Lauderdale, called the CABAL, a word which the initial letters of their names happened to compose.

The dark counsels of the cabal, though from the first they gave anxiety to all men of reflection, were not sufficiently known but by the event. They inspired the king with a jealousy of parliaments, and advised him to recover that authority in the nation, which his predecessors, during so many ages, had possessed; and they insinuated to Charles, that it would be for his interest, to detach himself from the triple alliance, not long before concluded between England, Holland and Sweden, and form a close intimacy with France. It was, however, by the artifices of his sister, the duchess of Orleans, that the king was prevailed on to relinquish the most settled maxims of honour and policy, and to finish his engagements with the French monarch as well for the destruction of Holland, as for a subsequent change of religion in England.

About this time, Blood, a disbanded officer of the protector's, who had been attainted for engaging in a conspiracy in Ireland, meditated revenge on the duke of Ormond, the lord-lieutenant. He seized the duke in the streets of London, but Ormond was saved by his servants. Buckingham was at first suspected of being the author of this attempt; and the marquis of Ossory

coming to court, and seeing Buckingham near the king, said to him, "My lord, I know well that you are at the bottom of the late attempt upon my father; but, I give you warning, that if by any means he come to a violent end, I shall consider you as the assassin, and wherever I meet you, I will pistol you, though you stood behind the king's chair: and I tell you this in his majesty's presence, that you may be sure I will not fail in the performance."

Soon after, Blood formed the design of carrying off the crown and regalia from the tower, and was very near succeeding in this enterprise. Being secured, however, and examined, he refused to name his accomplices. "The fear of death," he said, "shall never force me either to deny a guilt, or betray a friend." The king was moved by an idle curiosity to see a person so remarkable for his courage and his crimes. Blood now considered himself sure of pardon; and he told Charles, that he had been engaged with others to shoot him, but that his heart had been checked with the awe of majesty at the moment of execution. He added, that his associates had bound themselves by the strictest oaths to revenge the death of any one of the confederacy. Whether the king was influenced by fear or admiration, he pardoned the villain, and granted him an estate of five hundred pounds a-year in Ireland; while old Edwards, the keeper of the jewel-office, who had been wounded in defending the crown and regalia, was forgotten and neglected.

Under pretence of maintaining the triple league, which at that very time he had resolved to break, Charles obtained a large supply from the commons. This, however, was soon exhausted by debts and expenses; and, as it seemed dangerous to venture on levying money, without consent of parliament, the king declared that the staff of treasure was ready for any one who could devise the means of supplying his present necessities. Ashley dropped a hint to Clifford, which the latter adopted, and carried to the king, who granted him the promised reward, and also a peerage, for what ought to have brought him to the gallows. This expedient was the shutting up of the en-

chequer, and retaining all the payments which should be made into it.*

This breach of domestic honour was followed by foreign transactions of a similar complexion. On 1672] the most false and frivolous pretexts, Charles issued a declaration of war against the Dutch; and this was seconded by another from Louis XIV. To oppose this formidable confederacy, De Witt exerted himself in the utmost; but his merits had begotten envy, and the popular affection began to display itself in favour of William III. prince of Orange, then in the twenty-second year of his age, whom De Witt himself had instructed in all the principles of government and sound policy, and who was brought forward as his rival.

The struggle between the two factions retarded every measure. However, at length, a raw army of seventy thousand men was raised, and the prince was appointed both general and admiral of the commonwealth; but his partisans were still unsatisfied, as long as the *perpetual edict* remained in force, by which he was excluded from the stadtholderate.

Devoted solely to the interests of his country, De Witt disdained all party-spirit, and hastened the equipment of a fleet, which put to sea under the command of De Ruyter, who was strongly attached to him: This armament consisted of ninety-one ships of war, and forty-four fire-ships; and with these De Ruyter surprised at Solebay the combined fleets of France and England. The earl of Sandwich had warned the duke

* It may be necessary to observe, that bankers used to carry their money to the exchequer, and advance it upon the security of the funds, by which they were afterwards reimbursed, when the money was levied on the public. The bankers, by this traffic, got eight per cent. or more, for sums which had either been assigned to them without interest, or which they had borrowed at six per cent.; profits which they dearly paid for, by this egregious breach of public faith. The measure was so suddenly taken, that none had warning of the danger. A general confusion prevailed in the city, followed by the ruin of many. Distress every where took place, with a stagnation of commerce, by which the public was universally affected; and men, full of the most dismal apprehensions, were at a loss to account for such unprecedented and iniquitous counsels, by which the public credit was destroyed.

of York of his danger, and received only for answer, that there was more of caution than of courage in his apprehensions; but on the appearance of the enemy, he alone, with his squadron, was prepared for action. Sandwich commanded the van, and rushed into battle with the Dutch. He beat off one ship, and sunk another. He also destroyed three fire-ships which endeavoured to grapple with him; and though his own vessel was torn almost in pieces with shot, and nearly six hundred out of a thousand men lay dead on the deck, he still continued the contest. Another fire-ship, however, having laid hold of his vessel, her destruction was now inevitable, and he was advised by his captain to retire; but he preferred death to the appearance of deserting his post.

During this fierce engagement with Sandwich, De Ruyter attacked the duke of York, who fought with such fury for above two hours, that of thirty-two actions, in which the Dutch admiral had been engaged, he declared this was the most severe. The battle continued till night, when the Dutch retired, and were not followed by the English, and the loss sustained on both sides was nearly equal.

Louis advanced with his troops into Holland, and overran the country almost without opposition. Amsterdam alone seemed to retain some courage. The sluices were opened, and the neighbouring country laid under water. All the provinces now followed the example, and scrupled not, in this extremity, to restore to the sea those fertile fields which had formerly been won from it.

The combined potentates, finding at last some appearance of opposition, endeavoured to seduce the prince of Orange, who in consequence of the murder of De Witt, had obtained the whole ascendancy in public affairs. They offered him the sovereignty of Holland, and the protection of England and France, to insure him as well against foreign invasion, as the insurrection of his own subjects. All proposals, however, were generously rejected; and, when Buckingham urged the inevitable destruction that hung over the United Provinces, and asked him, whether he did not see whether the commonwealth was ruined, he replied, "There is one certain means by which I can

be sure never to see my country's ruin : I will die in the last ditch."

In the mean time, the other nations of Europe regarded the subjection of Holland as the forerunner of their own slavery. The emperor began to put himself in motion ; and Spain sent some forces to the assistance of the states ; but the ally on which the Dutch chiefly relied for support, was the English parliament, which the king's necessities at last obliged him to assemble. The parliament, however, granted a supply, but refused to express the smallest approbation of the war ; and they afforded Charles the prospect of this supply, only that they might be allowed to proceed in the redress of grievances.

The money granted by parliament served to equip a fleet of which prince Rupert was declared admiral ; for the duke of York was set aside by the test act, which passed during the present session. Three different, but indecisive actions, were fought at sea ; the last was the most obstinate. The victory, however, in this battle, was as doubtful as in all the actions fought during the present war.

The parliament of England being again assembled, discovered greater symptoms of jealousy than before, and remonstrated against a marriage which the duke of York, who had for some time been a widower, was negotiating with a catholic princess, of the house of Modena. What, however, chiefly alarmed the court, was an attack on the members of the cabal, to whose pernicious counsels the parliament imputed all their grievances. This produced a change in the ministry, somewhat in favour of the nation ; but the duke having concluded the proposed match, and the war with Holland being more unpopular than ever, Charles found that he could obtain no more supplies, while the
1674] present measures were pursued. He resolved, therefore, on a separate peace, which was negotiated under the Spanish ambassador, and was concluded on terms honourable to England, and to the great joy of the people.

The war, however, still continued between Holland and France, and the events to which it gave rise were regarded by the English people with extreme anxiety. Parliament viewed with much jealousy the measures

of government, and the king's secret attachments to France. This jealousy was increased by a bill introduced into the house of peers, by the earl of 1675] Lindesey, the object of which was, to oblige the members of both houses, and all who possessed any office, to swear, that it was unlawful, on any pretence whatever, to take arms against the king, and that they would not at any time endeavour any alteration in the established government, either in church or state. Great opposition was made to this bill, which was debated for seventeen days, and was carried only by two voices in the house of peers. In the commons it was likely to meet with still greater opposition; but a quarrel arising between the two houses, respecting a breach of privilege, the king finding that no business could be completed in consequence of this altercation, prorogued the parliament.

At this period, the king was the undisputed arbiter of Europe; and though he was sensible, that so long as the war continued he should enjoy no tranquillity at home, he could not bring himself to impose a peace by openly joining either party.

The parliament again assembled, after an adjournment of more than a year, and Charles made strong professions of future economy, and offered his con- 1677] sent to any laws for the farther security of religion and property. At first the commons proceeded with some degree of temper, and granted the sum of five hundred and eighty-six thousand pounds for building ships; but hearing of the defeat of the prince of Orange by marshal Luxemburgh, and of the capture of Valenciennes, Cambray, and St. Omer, by Louis, they addressed the king, representing the danger to which England was exposed, from the increasing greatness of France, and praying, that by such alliances as he should think fit to enter into, he would endeavour to secure both his own dominions and the Spanish Netherlands. Charles, considering this application as an attack on his measures, replied in general terms, that he would use all means for the preservation of Flanders, consistent with the peace and safety of his kingdoms. This answer was regarded as an evasion, or rather a denial; and the commons, instead of granting a supply, which the king had demanded,

voted an address, wherein they besought his majesty to enter into a league, offensive, and defensive, with the states-general of the United Provinces, against the growth and power of the French king, and for the preservation of the Spanish Netherlands, and to make such other alliances with the confederates as should appear fit and useful to that end. On these conditions they promised him effectual supplies; but Charles pretended to consider this address as an encroachment on his prerogative; and after reproving the commons in severe terms, he immediately adjourned both houses.

Had not the king been privately sold to France, this was the critical moment in which he might have preserved the balance of power in Europe, and regained the confidence of his subjects. This opportunity, however, was neglected; and the conduct of Charles was afterwards justly regarded with jealousy and distrust. But in order to allay, in some measure, the violent discontents which prevailed in the nation, the king encouraged proposals of marriage from the prince of Orange to the princess Mary, eldest daughter of the duke of York, who had no male issue, and who was consequently heir-apparent to the throne, after her father.

Charles graciously received his nephew, the prince of Orange, at Newmarket; and the latter was introduced to the princess, whom he found extremely amiable both in her person and manners. In a short time the marriage took place, and gave infinite satisfaction to all parties; but, notwithstanding the double tie by which the king was now bound to consult the interests of the States General, nothing could detach him from the French alliance; and he is said to have received from Louis the sum of two millions of livres as the price of prolonging the adjournment of parliament, which, it was feared, would have urged the necessity of joining the allies in a vigorous prosecution of the war.

At length after various negotiations, a treaty of general peace was signed at Nimeguen, where a
1678] congress had long been held by the ministers of the different powers. By this treaty, France secured the possession of Franche-comté, and of several towns in the Netherlands.

A strong spirit of indignation existed among the English against their sovereign, who had acted a part entirely subservient to the common enemy, and by whose supineness and irresolution Louis had been enabled to make such important acquisitions. In Scotland, too, religious differences ran high; conventicles multiplied in the west; the clergy of the established church were insulted; and the covenanters even met in arms at their places of worship. To repress the rising spirit of presbyterianism, a new parliament had been assembled at Edinburgh, some years before; and Lauderdale, who had been appointed commissioner, had sufficient influence to get some acts passed which were favourable to the prerogative; but the severity of his measures against the covenanters, raised up a party against him, of which duke Hamilton was the head.

In fact, both the language and the conduct of Charles daily tended to increase the prejudices and suspicions of his subjects. Arbitrary power and popery were apprehended as the scope of all his designs; and while the nation was in this jealous disposition, it is no wonder that every report against the catholics should be readily believed.

One Kirby, a chemist, informed the king, that there was a design against his life; and that two men, called Grove and Pickering, had engaged to shoot him, and sir George Wakeman, the queen's physician, to poison him. This intelligence, he said, had been communicated to him by doctor Tongue, a restless divine, who, being examined, declared to Danby, the treasurer, that the papers which contained information of the conspiracy had been thrust under his door.

The king concluded that the whole was an imposture; and the matter would probably have been consigned to oblivion, had not the duke of York, on hearing that priests and jesuits, and even his own confessor, had been implicated in the business, insisted that a regular inquiry should be made by the council into the pretended conspiracy. Kirby and Tongue were sought after, and were found living in close intimacy with Titus Oates, who was said to have conveyed the first intelligence to Tongue. This man, in whose breast was lodged a secret involving the fate of kings

was allowed to remain in such necessity, that Kirby supplied him with daily bread; and, as he expected more encouragement from the public, than from the king or his ministers, he judged it proper, before he was presented to the council, to give his evidence before sir Edmundsbury Godfrey, an active magistrate.

The intelligence of Oates tended to this purpose, that the pope, having assumed the sovereignty of England and Ireland, on account of the heresy of the prince and people, had delegated his authority to the jesuits, who had supplied, by commissions, all the chief offices, both civil and military.

It would be useless to enter into all the details of this pretended plot. Suffice it to observe, that Oates was one of the most infamous of mankind; and that, before the council, he betrayed his impostures in such a manner, as would have discredited the most consistent story, and the most reputable evidence. The plot, however, soon became the source of terror to the people; and Danby, out of opposition to the French interest, encouraged the story; and by his suggestions, one Coleman, who had been secretary to the late duchess of York, and had been implicated in this affair, was ordered to be arrested.

Among the papers of Coleman were found several passages, which contained very free remarks relative to the sentiments and principles of the king, and which contributed to diffuse through the nation a panic on account of the popish plot; and the people, regarding the remarks of Coleman as a confirmation of the truth of Oates' story, confounded a business which had no relation to it, with the originally hatched conspiracy.

The murder of sir Edmundsbury Godfrey, which was never accounted for, completed the general delusion, and rendered the prejudices of the nation absolutely incurable: While the nation was in this ferment, the parliament assembled; and the cry of the plot was immediately echoed from one house to the other. A solemn fast was voted; and addresses passed for the removal of popish recusants from London. The lords Powis, Stafford, Arundel, Peters, and Bellasis, were impeached for high-treason; and both houses, after hearing the evidence of Oates, voted, "That the lords and commons are of opinion, that

there hath been, and still is, a damnable and hellish plot, contrived and carried on by the popish recusants, for assassinating the king, for subverting the government, and for rooting out and destroying the protestant religion." Oates was applauded and caressed, and encouraged by a pension of 1200 pounds a year.

Such bounty brought forth new witnesses. William Bedloe, a man, if possible, more infamous than Oates, appeared next on the stage. At first, he gave intelligence only of Godfrey's murder, which, he said, had been perpetrated in Somerset-house, where the queen lived, by papists, some of whom were servants in her family. Next day, when examined before the lords, he gave an ample account of the plot; and he made his narrative agree as well as he could with that of Oates, which had been published; but, in order to heighten the effect, and render himself more acceptable, he added other circumstances still more dreadful and extraordinary.

Though the king ridiculed the plot, and all who believed it, yet he found it necessary to adopt the popular opinion before the parliament. A bill had been introduced for a new test, in which popery was denominated idolatry; and all members who refused this test were to be excluded from both houses. The duke of York, in the most pathetic manner, moved, that an exception might be admitted in his favour; and he protested, that whatever his religion might be, it should only be a private thing between God and his own soul, and never should appear in his public conduct. Notwithstanding this appeal, he prevailed only by two voices.

The public ferment was increased by the treachery of Montague, who had been ambassador at Paris, and who had procured a seat in the house of commons. He laid before the house a letter from the treasurer Danby, countersigned by the king, in which appeared the most palpable proofs of Charles's intrigues with the French court. Danby was immediately impeached by the commons, but the peers refused to commit him; and a great contest being likely to arise between the two houses, the king thought it advisable, first to prorogue, and afterwards to dissolve the parliament.

The want of money, however, compelled Charles to

1679] summon a new parliament; but being soon alarmed at their refractory disposition, in order to appease his people and the parliament, he desired the duke of York to withdraw beyond sea, that no farther suspicion of popish councils might remain. The duke readily complied; but first required an order for that purpose from the king, lest his absenting himself should be considered as a proof of fear or guilt; and he also desired that his brother would satisfy him, as well as the public, by declaring the illegitimacy of the duke of Monmouth.

This nobleman was a natural son of the king's by Lucy Walters, and born about ten years before the restoration. He possessed all the qualities which could engage the affections of the people; and, in proportion as the duke of York was the object of hatred, on account of his religion, Monmouth rose higher in the public favour. Some even flattered him with the hopes of succeeding to the crown; and the story of a contract of marriage between the king and his mother was industriously spread abroad, and eagerly received by the people. Charles, however, to put an end to all intrigues of this kind, as well as to remove the duke of York's apprehensions, in full council made a declaration of Monmouth's illegitimacy, on which York willingly complied with the king's desire, and retired to Brussels.

Charles, however, could not obtain the confidence of the parliament. The impeachment of Danby was revived, and the king, in order to screen his minister, granted him a full pardon; but it was pretended that no pardon of the crown could be pleaded in bar of an impeachment by the commons; and so resolute was parliament in support of its pretensions, that Danby was committed a close prisoner to the Tower.

It being expected that a bill for excluding the duke of York from the throne would be brought into parliament, Charles projected certain limitations, by which the successor, if a papist, would be deprived of the chief branches of royalty. These concessions, however, were rejected; and a bill was brought in for the absolute exclusion of the duke from the crown of England and Ireland. It was therein declared, that the sovereignty of these kingdoms, upon the king's de-

or resignation, should devolve to the person next in succession after the duke, and that all who supported his title should be punished as rebels and traitors. This important bill passed the lower house by a majority of 79.

Soon after, the standing army, and the king's guards were voted by the commons to be illegal; and that bulwark of personal and national liberty, the *habeas corpus* act, which provided against arbitrary imprisonment, was passed the same session.

In the mean time, the impeachment of the five popish lords, with that of the earl of Danby, was carried on with great vigour; but a dispute arising between the two houses, about allowing the bishops to vote on the trial of Danby, afforded the king a favourable pretext for dissolving the parliament.

This vigorous measure disappointed the malcontents; but even the recess of parliament afforded no interruption to the prosecution of the catholics accused of the plot. Whitbread, provincial of the jesuits, Fenwic, Gavan, Turner, and Harcourt, all of the same order, were condemned and executed on the most incoherent and doubtful evidence. Langborne, an eminent lawyer, by whom all the concerns of the jesuits were managed, was also convicted; and the first check which the informers received, was on the trial of sir George Wakeman, the queen's physician. The acquittal of Wakeman was a great mortification to the prosecutors of the plot, and fixed an indelible stain on Oates, Bedloe, and their abettors.

The discontents in England excited the attention of the Scottish covenanters, who, regarding Sharp, the primate, as an apostate from their principles, and an unrelenting persecutor, dragged him from his coach, and put him to death. This atrocious action gave rise to a violent persecution against the covenanters, who, finding themselves deeply involved in guilt, made themselves masters of the city of Glasgow, dispossessed the established clergy, and issued proclamations, declaring that they fought against the king's supremacy, against popery and prelacy, and against a popish successor.

The king, apprehensive of the consequences of this surrection, despatched Monmouth into Scotland

with a small body of English cavalry. That nobleman being joined by the Scottish guards, and some regiments of militia, marched with great celerity against the enemy, who had taken post near Bothwell castle. Their army never exceeded eight thousand men; and, being without officers and experience, they were speedily routed, with the loss of seven hundred killed, and one thousand two hundred taken prisoners. Monmouth treated these with great humanity, and an act of indemnity was soon after passed.

Charles falling ill at Windsor, such an affectionate regard was shown him, and such consternation seized all ranks of men, that, to use an expression of sir William Temple's, the king's death was regarded as the end of the world. The duke of York had been privately sent for; but, when he arrived, the king was out of danger. The journey, however, was attended with important consequences. He prevailed on the king to disgrace Monmouth, whose projects were now known and avowed; and he obtained leave himself to retire into Scotland, on pretence of quieting the apprehensions of the English, but, in reality, with a view of securing his interests in that kingdom.

From the favour and encouragement which the parliament had given to informers, the nation had got into a vein of credulity. One Dangerfield, a man of the most infamous character, was the author or denouncer of a new plot, called the *meal-tub* plot, from the place where some papers relative to it were found. The bottom of this affair it is difficult, and not material, to discover. It only appears, that Dangerfield, under pretence of betraying the conspiracies of the presbyterians, had been countenanced by some catholics of condition, and had even gained admission to the duke of York. Which side he originally intended to cheat is uncertain; but finding the nation more inclined to believe in a popish than a presbyterian plot, he fell in with the prevailing humour.

The duke of Monmouth returned without leave, and making a triumphant procession through many parts of the kingdom, increased the present ferment. Great endeavours were used to obtain the king's consent for the meeting of parliament. The crown was attacked by tumultuous petitions. Wherever the court party

prevailed, addresses were framed, expressing the deepest *abhorrence* of popular encroachments. Hence the nation was distinguished into *petitioners* and *abhorrrers*. Besides these appellations, which were soon forgotten, this is the epoch of the epithets **WHIG** and **TORY**,* which have been bandied about for nearly a century and a half, with little appropriate meaning, and frequently to the injury both of individuals and the public.

After a long interval, the king resolved to assemble the parliament; but all the mollifying expressions which he used in addressing that assembly, had no effect on the commons, who proceeded in their former career, and seemed bent on renewing the bill for excluding the duke of York from the succession; and the friends of Monmouth hoped that the exclusion of that prince would advance their patron to the throne. In the commons, the bill passed by a great majority; but in the house of peers, where the king expected to oppose it with success, the court-party prevailed, and it was rejected after a long and a violent debate.

The commons discovered much ill-humour on this disappointment, and resumed the impeachment of the catholic lords; and as viscount Stafford, from his age and infirmities, was least able to defend himself, he became the first victim. He protested, that the only treason of which he had ever been guilty, had been entering into schemes for procuring a toleration to the catholics, at least a mitigation of the penal laws enacted against them. The populace, who had exulted at his trial and condemnation, were melted into tears at the tender fortitude which he displayed on the scaffold.

This was the last blood that was shed on account of the popish plot. The commons, however, still found new occasions to exercise their talents against the court; and besides insisting on the exclusion, they proceeded to bring in other bills of an alarming nature. The king, seeing no hopes of restoring the

* The court-party reproached their antagonists with resembling the fanatical conventiclers in Scotland, who had obtained the name of *whigs*; and the country party found a resemblance between the courtiers and the popish banditti in Ireland, to whom the appellation of *tory* was affixed. Hence the

commons to a better temper, came to the resolution of proroguing them; but the house having got intelligence of his design a short time before it was put in execution, in the most tumultuous manner passed some extraordinary resolutions, which were indirectly subversive of the throne.

Soon after this session was closed, Charles summoned a new parliament, and, in order to prevent those tumults, which attended their assembling at Westminster, from the vicinity of a populous city, he directed them to meet him at Oxford. Against this, Monmouth and fifteen peers protested, on the ground that the two houses would be there exposed to the swords of the papists and their adherents. These insinuations inflamed the people still more; the leaders came to parliament, attended not only by their servants, but by numerous retainers; and the assembly at Oxford resembled more a Polish diet than an English parliament.

The commons consisted nearly of the same members, and fell instantly into the same measures, the impeachment of Danby, the inquiry into the popish plot, and the bill of exclusion. So violent were they on this last article, that no expedient, however plausible, could be hearkened to. One of the king's ministers proposed, that the duke should be banished five hundred miles from England, and on the king's demise, the next heir should be constituted regent with regal power; yet even this expedient, which would have left the duke of York only the bare title of king, failed to satisfy the house. Charles, seeing no probability of a better temper in the commons, without sacrificing his brother, dissolved the parliament; and resolved to depend on economy and retrenchment for alleviating the necessities under which he laboured.

As the king no longer dreaded the clamours of the country party, he permitted the duke of York to pay him a visit. The duke chose to take his passage by sea; and the ship in which he embarked struck on a sand-bank, and was lost; but he escaped, with a few of his party, in the barge. It is said, that while many persons of rank and quality were drowning, and, among the rest, Hyde, his brother-in-law, the duke was very clamorous to save the dogs and the

Through the influence of the crown, two sheriffs, North and Rich, were chosen in the city, on account of their devotion to the court; but as the contest might be renewed every year, a project was formed to make the king master at once, not only of the city, but of all the corporations in England. A writ of *quo warranto** was issued against the city, which, it was pretended, had forfeited all its privileges, on account of some irregularities in its proceedings several years before; and though the cause of the city was ably defended against the attorney and solicitor generals, the judges decided against it. After sentence had been pronounced, the citizens petitioned the king, who agreed to restore them their charter, but obliged them to submit to the following regulations: That no mayor, sheriff, recorder, common-sergeant, town-clerk, or coroner, should be admitted to the exercise of his office without his majesty's approbation: that if the king disapproved twice of the mayor or sheriffs elected, he may, by commission, appoint those magistrates: that the mayor and court of aldermen may, with his majesty's leave, displace any magistrate: and that no alderman, in case of a vacancy, shall be elected without the consent of the court of aldermen, who, if they disapprove twice of the choice, may fill the vacancy.

All the corporations in England, from this precedent, saw how ineffectual it would be to contend with the court, and, therefore, most of them were induced to surrender their charters into the king's hands. Considerable sums were exacted for restoring the [1683] charters; and all offices of power or profit, by the restrictions introduced, were now left at the disposal of the crown. The conduct of Charles in these proceedings was a most violent infraction of personal and national liberty, and sufficiently proves the arbitrary and tyrannical principles by which he governed. Every friend to liberty must allow, that the nation, whose constitution had been thus violated, was justified in employing expedients for recovering the security of which it had been so unjustly deprived.

There was a party, who, even before this last in-

* That is, an inquiry into the validity of its charter

iquitous proceeding, which laid the whole constitution at the mercy of the king, meditated plans of resistance to the measures of the court. The duke of Monmouth, lord Russel, and lord Gray, solicited, not only the capital, but the nobility and gentry of several counties, to rise in arms, and oppose the succession of the duke. The whole train was ready to take fire; but was prevented by the caution of lord Russel, who, in opposition to Shaftesbury, the prime mover, induced Monmouth to delay the enterprise. Shaftesbury, enraged at this delay, abandoned all hopes of success, and withdrew to Holland, where he died soon after, little regretted by his friends, or noticed by his enemies.

At last, a regular project of insurrection was formed. The council consisted of Monmouth, Russel, Essex, Howard, Algernon Sidney, and John Hampden, grandson to the great parliamentary leader. These men entered into an agreement with Argyle and the Scottish malcontents, who engaged to bring the covenanters into the field. The conspirators, however, differed widely in their views. Sidney and Essex were for a republic; Monmouth entertained hopes of obtaining the crown for himself; and Russel and Hampden were attached to the ancient constitution, and wished only a redress of grievances, and the exclusion of the duke of York. Howard, who was a man of no principle, was ready to espouse any party, to which his interest might lead him. But, discordant as they seemed, in their characters and views, they were all united in a common hatred of the heir-apparent.

While these schemes were concerting among the leaders, an inferior order of conspirators held frequent meetings, and carried on projects quite unknown to Monmouth, and the cabal of six; and the only persons of this confederacy, who had access to the leaders of the party, were Ferguson, and colonel Rumsey, an old republican officer. These persons indulged in the most criminal discourse; and proposed to assassinate Charles at a farm called the Rye-house, which lay on the road to Newmarket, whither the king commonly went once a-year; but the house in which his majesty lived there happening to take fire, obliged him to leave that place, sooner than he intended, and thus the execution of the design was prevented.

Among the conspirators was one Keiling, who, being under a criminal prosecution, in order to obtain a pardon, betrayed his associates to secretary Jenkins. Search being made after the conspirators, colonel Rumsey, and West, a lawyer, finding the perils to which they were exposed, surrendered themselves, and turned evidence. Rumsey made known the meetings of the leaders; and orders were issued for arresting the great men engaged in the conspiracy. Monmouth absconded; Russel was sent to the Tower; Gray was arrested, but escaped; and Howard, a profligate man, being taken, in hopes of pardon and reward, revealed the whole plot. Essex, Sidney, and Hampden, were immediately apprehended; and some of the inferior conspirators being convicted, paid the forfeit of their lives.

The condemnation of these criminals was preparatory to the trial of Lord Russel, a nobleman illustrious for his virtues, and highly popular, against whom Rumsey, Shephard, and Howard, appeared. It was proved, that an insurrection had been resolved on, and the surprisal of the king's guards taken into consideration by the prisoner; but still, with regard to law, there remained an important difficulty. By an act passed soon after the restoration, to consult on a rebellion, during Charles's lifetime, was declared treason; but it was required, that the prosecution should be commenced within six months after the crime had been committed. The facts sworn to by Rumsey and Shephard were beyond the six months required by law; and to the other circumstances, Howard was the only evidence, whereas by the statute of Edward III., the crime of treason must be proved by two witnesses.

Russel perceived this irregularity, and desired to have the point argued by counsel; but the chief-justice told him, that this favour could not be granted, unless he previously confessed the facts; and the artificial confounding of the two species of treason was the principal, though not the only hardship, of which this unfortunate nobleman had reason to complain on his trial. His veracity would not allow him to deny the conspiracy for an insurrection; but he solemnly protested, that he had never entertained any design against the life of the king. After a short deliberation, the jury brought him in guilty.

Applications were made to the king for a pardon; and even money to a very considerable amount, was offered to the duchess of Portsmouth by the earl of Bedford, father to Russel; but Charles was inexorable.

Lady Russel, daughter and heir of the earl of Southampton, a woman of the most exalted merit, threw herself at the king's feet, and pleaded with many tears the services of her father as an atonement for the error of her husband. Finding her supplications ineffectual, she summoned up all the fortitude of her soul, and even endeavoured, by her example, to strengthen the resolution of her unfortunate lord. With a tender and decent composure, they took leave of each other on the day of his execution. "The bitterness of death is now past," said he, as he turned from her. To the last he maintained the same dignified composure, the same good-humoured equanimity for which he had been always distinguished. He was the most popular among his own party, and admired for his virtues even by the opposite faction; and his melancholy fate united every heart, sensible of humanity, in a tender compassion for him.

Algernon Sidney, the apostle of liberty, was next brought to trial. This gallant person, son to the earl of Leicester, had been deeply implicated in the civil wars; but he opposed the usurpation of Cromwell with zeal and courage; and, after the restoration, he chose voluntary banishment, rather than submit to a government and family which he abhorred. At length, he returned to England, and applied for the king's pardon, which he obtained.

Howard was again the only witness against Sidney; but, as the law required two, a strange expedient was adopted to supply the deficiency. In searching the prisoner's closets, some discourses on government were found, in which he maintained principles, favourable indeed to liberty, but such as the most dutiful subjects have been known to embrace, and which, even if they had been published, could not have infringed any positive law. These papers, however were said to be equivalent to a second witness; and the violent and inhuman judge Jefferies easily prevailed on a prejudiced jury to give a verdict against Sidney.

He complained, with great reason, of the iniquity of the sentence; and he died glorying in the "good old cause," in which from his youth, he said, he had enlisted himself.

Howard was also the sole witness against Hampden, who, therefore, was indicted only for a misdemeanor; and sentence being obtained against him, the exorbitant fine of forty thousand pounds was imposed on him.

On the day that Russel was tried, Essex, a man eminent for his virtues and abilities, was found in the Tower with his throat cut. Whether he committed suicide, or was murdered by others, has never been clearly ascertained.

On the detection of this conspiracy, loyal addresses
1684] arrived from all parts of the kingdom; and, in order to increase his present popularity, Charles judged it proper to give his niece, the lady Anne, in marriage to prince George, brother to the king of Denmark; but, though the king had recovered his former popularity in the nation, and was enabled to govern without a parliament, it is certain he was neither happy nor satisfied. The violent temper of his brother gave him apprehension and uneasiness; and, in opposing some of the duke's hasty counsels, he was heard one day to say, "Brother, I am too old to go again on my travels: you may, if you choose it." It was evident, that the king meditated some change of measures; and it was believed, that he intended to send the duke of York to Scotland, to recal Monmouth, to assemble his parliament, and to dismiss his obnoxious ministers; but amidst these wise and virtuous designs, he was seized with an apoplectic fit, and, after languishing a few days, expired in the fifty-fifth year of his age, and the twenty-fifth of his reign. Having always enjoyed a good constitution, his death begat suspicion of poison; but when all circumstances are considered, this suspicion appears without foundation. His loss, however, was sincerely lamented by his people, as well on account of their affection for him, as of their dread of his successor.

During the few days of the king's illness, he showed a total indifference to the devotions and exhortations of the clergy of the established church, but re-

ceived the sacrament from the hands of catholic priests; and in his cabinet were found two papers, which contained arguments in favour of the Romish communion, and which the duke of York had the imprudence immediately to publish.

Charles, when considered as a companion, appears the most amiable and engaging of men; he had a ready wit, was well-bred, and good-natured. When, however, we view his public character, he evidently sinks in our estimation. As a sovereign, his conduct was dangerous to his people, and disgraceful to himself. Negligent of the interests of the nation, careless of its glory, averse to its religion; jealous of its liberty, lavish of its treasures, and sparing only of its blood, he exposed it by his measures to the danger of a civil war, and even to the ruin and ignominy of a foreign conquest.

CHAPTER V.

The Reign of James II.

THE first act of James's reign was to assemble the 1685] privy-council, and declare his resolution to maintain the established government in church and state; but in the first exercise of his authority, he showed the insincerity of his professions. All the customs, and the greater part of the excise, had been settled by parliament on the late king during life, and consequently the grant had expired; but James, without regarding the laws, issued a proclamation, ordering payment of the customs and excise as before; and he also went openly, and with all the ensigns of dignity, to mass. By this imprudence he displayed at once his arbitrary disposition, and the bigotry of his principles.

However little inclined James might be to an English parliament, he found it absolutely necessary to summon one; but his speech to that assembly was calculated rather to awaken their fears than to work on their affections. He required them to settle his revenue, and that during his life, as had been done to his

brother. "There is, indeed," added he, "one popular argument against complying with my demand. Men may think, that by feeding me, from time to time, with such supplies as they think convenient, they will better secure frequent meetings of parliament; but as this is the first time I speak to you from the throne, I must plainly tell you, that such an expedient would be very improper to employ with me, and that the best way to engage me to meet you often, is always to use me well."

The parliament was thus placed in a very critical situation, either of opposing James at once, or of complying with his wishes; and the commons voted the same revenue to his present majesty during life, as had been enjoyed by the late king. The lords were no less compliant; and they endeavoured to break in pieces the remains of the popish plot. Oates, who had been tried and convicted of perjury, was sentenced to perpetual imprisonment, besides being publicly whipped, and five times a-year exposed in the pillory. The impudence of this man still supported him, and he made solemn appeals to heaven for the truth of his testimony.*

The conviction of Oates was noticed by the house of peers; and the popish lords Powis, Arundel, Bellasis, and Tyrone, together with the earl of Danby, were freed from their impeachment; but the course of parliamentary proceedings was interrupted by the news of Monmouth's arrival in the west, with three ships from Holland. Parliament immediately passed a bill of attainder against Monmouth, and voted, that they would adhere to James with their lives and fortunes; and they granted the king a supply of four hundred thousand pounds for suppressing the rebellion.

The unfortunate Monmouth, pursued by the severity of James, even in his retirement on the continent, and urged by the impatient humour of Argyle, who set out for Scotland in his cause, was driven contrary to his judgment as well as inclination, to make a rash and premature attempt. Landing at Lyme, in Dorset, with scarcely a hundred followers, the popularity of

* On the accession of king William, Oates recovered his liberty, and a pension of four hundred pounds a-year settled on him.

his name soon drew to his standard above two thousand horse and foot. At Taunton he assumed the regal title; and he was proclaimed king at Bridgewater, Wells, and Frome; but he allowed the expectations of the people to languish without attempting any considerable undertaking.

Hearing that Argyle had been defeated, Monmouth fell into despondency; but his followers showed more courage, and seemed determined to adhere to him in every fortune. The negligence of Feversham, the royal general, invited Monmouth to attack the king's army at Sedgemoor, where, after a combat of three hours, the rebels gave way. About one thousand five hundred fell in the battle and pursuit; and the unhappy Monmouth fled from the field, above twenty miles, till his horse sunk under him. He then changed clothes with a peasant, in order to conceal himself; but at last, he was found lying in the bottom of a ditch, and covered with fear. His body, depressed with fatigue and hunger, and his mind, by the memory of past misfortunes, and the prospect of future ills, he burst into tears when seized by his enemies, and seemed still to indulge the fond hope and the desire of life. He wrote to James in the most submissive terms, conjuring him to spare the issue of a brother; and the king finding such symptoms of contrition and despondency in the unhappy prisoner, admitted him into his presence in hopes of extorting a discovery of his accomplices; but Monmouth would not purchase life, however loved, at the price of so much infamy. Finding all efforts vain, he prepared himself for death, with a spirit worthy of his rank and character, and was attended to the scaffold by the tears of the people, with whom he had ever been a favourite.

This victory, if it had been managed with prudence, would have tended to confirm the power and authority of the king; but the cruelty with which it was prosecuted by the savage colonel Kirk, and the infamous judge Jefferies, hastened the ruin of James. Besides those who were butchered by the military commanders, two hundred and fifty-one victims are said to have been executed; and all the rigours of justice, unabated by any appearance of clemency, were fully displayed by the barbarous Jefferies.

In Scotland, the fate of Argyle had been decided before that of Monmouth. The parliament of that country acknowledged the king's authority to be absolute; and with such a servile train, the patriotic virtues of Argyle could stand no chance of obtaining a pardon. He was seized, and carried to Edinburgh, where, after enduring many indignities, he was publicly executed.

Elated with this tide of short-lived prosperity, James began to undervalue the authority of an English parliament, and in a speech to that assembly, he observed, that he had employed many catholic officers, in whose favour he had dispensed with the law, which requires the test to be taken by every one possessed of any public office; and he also declared, that, having received the benefit of their service, he was resolved neither to expose them afterwards to disgrace, nor himself to the want of their assistance. The commons voted an address to the king against the dispensing power; but this address was ill received by James, who returned a haughty reply. At their next meeting, the commons proceeded to the consideration of a supply, and went so far in their submissions as to establish funds for paying the sums voted. The king, therefore, had, in effect, obtained almost a complete victory over the lower house, which ceased to be the guardian of the liberties and property of the people.

In the upper house, however, Compton, bishop of London, in his own name and that of his brethren, moved that a day should be appointed for taking the king's speech into consideration; and notwithstanding the opposition of Jefferies, the chancellor, the bishop's motion prevailed. James was so much irritated, that he proceeded immediately to prorogue, and finding that he could not break the firmness of the leading members, he finally dissolved the parliament.

The open declaration of James, to dispense with the tests, had diffused an universal alarm throughout the nation, had alienated the church, and even disgusted the army. The former horror against popery was revived; and this was further increased by Louis XIV., having, about the same time, revoked the edict of Nantes, in consequence of which nearly fifty thou

sand refugees passed over into England; and, from their representations, all men dreaded the projects which were supposed to be formed by the king for abolishing the protestant religion.

Though James had failed in prevailing on the parliament, he was successful in establishing his dispensing power, by a verdict of the judges. Four catholic lords were also brought into the privy-council; 1686] the king was openly zealous in making converts; and men plainly saw, that the only means of acquiring his majesty's confidence, was the sacrifice of their religion. Those who had any regard to decency, any attachment to the liberties of their country, or to the protestant faith, now withdrew from the ministry, or were dismissed, and their places were filled with renegadoes, who squared their belief by their interest.

All judicious persons of the catholic communion easily foresaw the consequences of these violent measures; but James was entirely governed by the rash counsels of the queen, and of his confessor, father Peters, a jesuit and privy-counsellor. The king issued a proclamation, suspending all the penal laws in ecclesiastical affairs, and granting a general liberty of conscience to all his subjects. In order to facilitate the reception of this edict of toleration, James began to pay court to the dissenters; but his intentions were so obvious, that he found it impossible to obtain the confidence of the nonconformists; and if the dissenters had been blinded by his professions, the measures pursued in Scotland, and also in Ireland, were sufficient to discover the secret.

James, however, did not long affect to conceal his designs. He publicly sent the earl of Castlemaine ambassador-extraordinary to Rome, in order to express his obeisance to the pope, and to bring about a reconciliation with the holy see; but the pontiff, rightly concluding that a scheme conducted with such indiscretion could never succeed, treated the ambassador with neglect, and thought it sufficient to send a nuncio to England, who was solemnly received at Windsor, in opposition to an express act of parliament, by which it was made treason to hold any correspondence with the pope.

By virtue of his prerogative, James had suspended the penal laws, and dispensed with the test; and he would gladly have obtained the sanction of parliament to these acts of power; but, finding that impossible, he forebore to convene that assembly, and proceeded to strengthen the catholic party by every expedient. The church and the universities had hitherto been shut against the catholics; and though the university of Oxford had lately made a solemn profession of passive obedience, yet when the king sent a mandate for appointing one Farmer, a convert to popery, president of Magdalen college, one of the richest foundations in Europe, the fellows chose Dr. Hough, a man whose virtue and firmness rendered him not only proper for the office, but for the times. On inquiry, Farmer was found guilty of the most scandalous vices; and a new mandate was issued in favour of Parker, lately created bishop of Oxford, a man also of a prostitute character, who atoned for his vices by his willingness to embrace the catholic religion; but the society representing that by the statutes, Parker could not be chosen, the president and all the fellows, except two who complied, were expelled the college; and Parker was appointed president.

The next measure of the court rendered the breach between the king and the ecclesiastics incurable. James had published a second declaration of indulgence, which he ordered to be read in all the
1688] churches, immediately after divine service. The clergy in general determined to oppose this violence done to their consciences; and Lloyd, bishop of St. Asaph; Ken, of Bath and Wells; Turner, of Ely; Lake, of Chichester; White, of Peterborough; and Trelawney, of Bristol, met privately with the primate, and drew up a petition to the king, that he would not insist on their reading the declaration. For this the prelates were committed to the Tower; and the crown lawyers were directed to prosecute them for the seditious libel, which, it was pretended, they had composed and uttered.

The bishops, however, notwithstanding the machinations of the court, were acquitted; and the joy which the intelligence of this event diffused throughout the kingdom is indescribable. The army

encamped on Hounslow-beath soon caught the contagion; and James, who had that day reviewed the troops, and was in the general's tent, was surprised to hear a general uproar in the camp: inquiring the cause, he was told by lord Feversham, "it was nothing but the rejoicing of the soldiers for the acquittal of the bishops." "Do you call that nothing?" replied he, "but so much the worse for them." Nothing, however, could check the main career of James. He struck out two of the judges who had appeared to favour the bishops; and he issued orders to prosecute all those clergymen who had not read his declaration; and to the honour of the established church be it recorded, that only two hundred complied with his edict.

A few days before the acquittal of the bishops, the queen was delivered of a son, to the great joy of the king and all zealous catholics; but so violent was the animosity against the court, that calumny ascribed to James the design of imposing on the world a suppositious child. He was baptized by the name of James, and was afterwards known by the title of "the pretender."

The prince of Orange, who had married the princess Mary of England, eldest daughter of the king, had maintained a very prudent conduct: and James strongly solicited the consent of the prince to the repeal of the penal statutes and of the test; but the latter declared his refusal to concur in these measures, unless the same should be sanctioned by parliament. This declaration gave courage to the protestants, while it excited the indignation of James, who prepared to make war on the United States. Many persons of consequence and talents, flying from England, offered their services to William, and requested his active interference.

The prince, after duly weighing the matter, and finding the whigs, the tories, the churchmen, and the non-conformists, forgetting their animosities, all leagued in the design of resisting their deluded sovereign, yielded to the very respectable and numerous applications that had been made to him; and having secretly augmented the Dutch navy, levied troops, and raised considerable sums of money, he waited for a fa-

avourable opportunity of embarking for England, which regarded him as its sole protector.

Louis, who had penetrated the designs of the prince, conveyed the intelligence to James; but the king treated the information with contempt, and refused the assistance which the French monarch offered on this occasion. At last, however, when convinced that he might soon expect a powerful invasion from Holland, James opened his eyes, and found himself on the brink of a frightful precipice. He now began to retract those fatal measures which had created him so many foreign and domestic enemies; but when intelligence arrived, that a great disaster had befallen the Dutch fleet, he recalled, for some time, the concessions which he had made.

Meanwhile, a declaration from the prince of Orange was dispersed over the kingdom, and met with universal approbation. All the grievances of the nation were there enumerated; and to redress these, the prince said, that he intended to come over into England with an armed force.

After a prosperous voyage, he landed his army safely in Torbay, on the fifth day of November, and, marching to Exeter, caused his declaration to be there published. 1688] By degrees, all England was in commotion; and every day showed some effect of that universal combination into which the nation had entered against the measures of the king; but the most dangerous symptom was the disaffection of the army, all the officers of which seemed disposed to regard only the interests of their country and their religion. Lord Cornbury carried over three regiments to the prince; and several officers informed Feversham, the general, that they could not in conscience draw their swords against the Dutch. Even lord Churchill, who had been raised from the rank of a page, and owed his whole fortune to the bounty of the crown, influenced by principle alone, deserted his master, and carried with him the duke of Grafton, natural son to the late king.

James, however, received a still more fatal blow in the defection of George, prince of Denmark, his son-in-law, and his daughter Anne, who both joined the prince. When intelligence of this reached the king,

the unfortunate sovereign burst into tears. "God help me," cried he, in the extremity of his agony, "my own children have forsaken me!" His last acts of authority were to issue writs for a new parliament, and to send Halifax, Nottingham, and Godolphin, as commissioners, to treat with the prince of Orange. He even hearkened to imprudent counsel, by which he was prompted to desert the throne. Alarmed by the general disaffection, and impelled by his own fears and those of others, James precipitately embraced the resolution of escaping into France; and, having previously sent off the queen and the infant prince, he himself disappeared in the night-time, and hastened to embark and follow them.

By this rash act, the reins of the government were thrown up, and the populace became masters; and rising in a tumultuous manner, they destroyed the mass-houses, and rifled the places in which the catholics had lodged their most valuable effects. Jefferies, the chancellor, who had disguised himself, was discovered, and treated with the greatest severity, in consequence of which he died soon after. Feversham no sooner heard of the king's flight, than he disbanded his troops, without either disarming or paying them.

In the mean time, however, James had been seized at Feversham, and obliged to return to London, where the populace, moved by compassion, or actuated by loyalty, received him with shouts and acclamations. During his abode at Whitehall, little attention was paid him; and desiring permission to retire to Rochester, a town near the sea-coast, his request was immediately granted. He privately embarked on board a frigate which waited for him, and arrived safely at Ambletouse, in Picardy, whence he hastened to St. Germain's. Louis received him with the greatest generosity and respect, a circumstance more honourable to him than his most splendid victories.

Thus ended the reign of James; a prince who possessed many of the qualities which form a good citizen, but whose bigotry and arbitrary principles rendered him odious as a king. In domestic life his conduct was irreproachable; and even while he was sacrificing every thing to the advancement of popery, his frugality of the public money was remarkable, and

his jealousy of the national honour commendable; but his invasion of the rights and liberties of the people tarnished every other virtue, and his disregard to the religion and constitution of his country could not be compensated by any other qualities. In principle, he was a despot and a bigot; and his abdication of the throne, and consequent exclusion, have proved the happiness of this kingdom.

Thus the prince of Orange, with little effusion of blood, effected the deliverance of England, and dethroned a king possessed of a formidable navy and a numerous army. Still a more difficult task remained, to obtain for himself that crown which had fallen from the head of his father-in-law. To claim it by right of conquest would have been destructive to the principles of liberty, which he professed to establish; and he wisely resolved to leave the settlement of this important affair to the guidance and direction of the nation.

In the convention which was assembled, it was ev-
 1689] ident that the whig party chiefly prevailed, and the commons sent up a vote to the peers, "That king James II. having endeavoured to subvert the constitution of the kingdom, by breaking the original contract between the king and the people; and having, by the advice of jesuits and other wicked persons, violated the fundamental laws, and withdrawn himself out of the kingdom, has abdicated the government, and that the throne is thereby vacant." This vote, when carried to the upper house, met with great opposition; and the last clause, which declared the throne vacant, was omitted; but the commons still insisted on their original vote, and some peers deserting to the whig interest, the whole was passed, and received the sanction of both houses.

During these debates, the prince had maintained a respectful silence; but, at length, he expressed his sentiments on the present situation of affairs. He observed, that some insisted on appointing a regent, and that others were desirous of bestowing the crown on the princess Mary alone; that though he pretended not to interfere in their deliberations, he thought it incumbent on him to inform them that he was determined not to be the regent, nor would he accept a

crown which depended on the life or will of another; and, therefore, if they were inclined to either of these two plans of settlement, it would be wholly out of his power to give them any further assistance.

The princess seconded the views of her husband, and the princess Anne agreeing to be postponed in the succession to the crown, facilitated the public settlement. The principal parties being thus agreed, the convention passed a bill, settling the crown on the prince and princess of Orange, the sole administration to remain in the prince; the princess Anne to succeed after the death of the prince and princess of Orange; and her issue after those of the princess, but before those of the prince by any other wife. To this settlement the convention annexed a declaration of rights, in which the powers of royal prerogative were more narrowly circumscribed, and more exactly defined, than at any former period.

Soon after, similar resolutions having been passed by the Scottish convention, William and Mary were proclaimed in both kingdoms.

CHAPTER VI.

The Reign of William and Mary.

THE revolution, as it is called, formed a new epoch in the constitution, which now assumed a different aspect; and it may be affirmed, without any danger of 1689] exaggeration, that, since that period, the British have enjoyed a system of government the most perfect and the most free that was ever established in the world.

While, however, William and Mary were thus peaceably established on the throne of Great Britain, a very different scene presented itself in Ireland. The catholics in that country saw with reluctance the events which had taken place, and testified their adherence to James.

The earl of Tyrconnel, the lord deputy, disguised his sentiments, and amused William with false hopes of submission, till James should be able to supply

him with reinforcements from France, which he earnestly solicited by private messages.

In the mean time, the whigs, who were the prevailing party in the state, determined that the revenue for the maintenance of the king's household, and the support of his dignity, should be granted from one year to another only, in order that William, finding himself constantly dependent on parliament, might endeavour to merit a renewal of the grant by a just and popular government. The king, however, was disgusted with these restraints, which he considered as marks of distrust; and the tories seized this occasion to foment his jealousy against their adversaries. William recommended to parliament a bill of indemnity, as the most effectual means of putting an end to all controversies and distinctions; but this was defeated for some time by the address of the whigs, who were sensible that the bill would open a way to the preferment of the tories. The two parties, however, were now so equally balanced in parliament, that the bill for restoring corporations to their ancient rights passed by one vote only, with the rejection of two clauses against those who had been concerned in the surrender of charters.

The king found himself so perplexed between two factions, which he equally feared, that he had resolved to leave the government in the queen's hands, and retire into Holland; but he was dissuaded from this purpose by the marquis of Caermarthen and other noblemen whom he consulted; and finding the tories more compliant, he began to gratify them at the expense of the whigs. The latter were foiled or out-voted in several favourite schemes; and the earl of Shrewsbury resented this so highly, that he resigned his office of secretary of state.

William having wholly given himself up to the politics of the tories, was soon gratified with the hereditary excise during life, and the customs for four years. The bill of indemnity, so earnestly recommended by the king, was also passed, with the exception of thirty persons.

At this period, the great scheme which William had projected, of a confederacy against France, began to take effect. The emperor negotiated an alliance

offensive and defensive, with the States-general; and Spain and England were invited to accede to the treaty. William, who was at the head of this confederacy, found no difficulty in persuading the English to undertake a war against their ancient rivals; and the commons unanimously resolved, that in case his majesty should think fit to engage in hostilities with France, they would enable him to carry on the war with vigour. This was very agreeable to the king; and war was immediately declared against the French monarch.

Louis XIV., who had long rendered himself the terror and the scourge of Europe, was not dejected by this confederacy against him. He supplied James with a considerable fleet for the invasion of Ireland, and the ex-prince, with about twelve hundred British subjects, and several of the most distinguished French officers, landed at Kinsale, on the 22d of March, 1689. The earl of Tyrconnel had assembled an army of thirty thousand foot, and eight thousand horse, for the service of his master; and the whole kingdom, except the city of Londonderry, received James with submission.

Finding his affairs in England in a desperate state, and that he had been deceived by those in whom he had confided, William determined to pass over into that island in person. A general engagement took place on the banks of the Boyne, in which the Irish 1690] were entirely defeated; and James retired to Dublin, whence he fled a second time into France; but the hopes and the spirits of his party were not yet vanquished.

A French fleet being discovered off Plymouth, the earl of Torrington, the English admiral, reinforced with a Dutch squadron, put to sea, in order to intercept the enemy, if an attempt should be made to sail up the channel. After the hostile fleets had continued in sight of each other, for five days, lord Torrington bore down upon the enemy off Beachey Head; and an engagement ensued, in which the English were defeated, with the loss of two of their own ships, and of six vessels belonging to the Dutch. A camp was immediately formed in the neighbourhood of Torbay, where the French seemed to threaten a descent; but their fleet, after setting fire to the small village of

Teignmouth, and burning a few coasting-vessels, returned to Brest.

The news of the victory obtained by the French fleet effaced all thoughts of submission on the part of the Irish, and an offer of indemnity from William, to those who would lay down their arms, produced little effect. This, however, only increased the misery of that unhappy country, which suffered from both parties; but, at length, the French forces embarked for their own country; and William, having constituted the lord Sydney and Thomas Coningsby lords-justices of Ireland, and left the command of the army with count de Solmes and baron de Ginkle, returned to England, with prince George of Denmark.

Next year the Irish rebels were entirely reduced 1691] and a capitulation was executed, extending to all the places in that kingdom which had not yet submitted. By it the catholics were restored to the same rights and privileges as they had enjoyed under Charles II.; and twelve thousand of the determined adherents of James were allowed to transport themselves to France.

The conquest of Ireland being thus effected, the French king resolved to invade England during the absence of William, who had sailed for Holland, in order to promote the measures of the grand confederacy. Louis seemed warmly engaged in the interest of James; and the jacobites* in England were assured, that their lawful sovereign would revisit his British dominions at the head of thirty thousand men.

Accordingly, a considerable body of French forces, and many fugitive Irish and Scots assembled, between Cherbourg and La Hogue, commanded by James in person; while a French fleet, of sixty-three ships of the line, under admiral Tourville, was appointed to convoy the troops. Admiral Russel, with a fleet of ninety-nine ships of the line, English and Dutch, besides frigates and fire-ships, set sail for the coast of France. On the 19th of May, 1692, the hostile fleets met off La Hogue; and after a bloody contest of nearly twelve hours, victory declared in favour of the

* A term given to the partisans of James, or the adherents of the ex-family.

WILLIAM AND MARY.

English. The French lost fifteen ships of the line and this defeat reduced James to the greatest dependence, and overwhelmed his friends in England with despair.

The war, however, was continued on the continent for some years, with various success; but at last [1697] was terminated by the treaty of Rhyswick, to the no advantage to England beyond honour and independence, and with the burden of a national debt which has since increased to an enormous amount.

The terrors of a standing army produced a general ferment in the nation: and the king was extremely mortified, when the commons voted, that the number of standing forces should be reduced to ten thousand. The earl of Sunderland, who had advised the unpopular measure of a standing army, dreading the vengeance of the commons, resigned his office.

William at this time revolved in his mind the settling of the succession to the throne of Spain, which would shortly be vacated by the death of Charles II. and he, therefore, directed that sixteen thousand men should be retained in the service. When the next parliament met, the commons were so irritated at the king's presuming to maintain a greater number of troops than their predecessors had voted, that they passed a resolution that the army in England and Wales should be disbanded by a fixed day, with the exception of seven thousand men, who were judged sufficient for guards and garrisons.

William was highly indignant at the conduct of his ministers and the parliament; but when the bill was ready for the royal assent, he went to the house of peers; and having sent for the commons, he told them, that though he considered himself unkindly treated, in being deprived of his Dutch guards, yet nothing could be more fatal to the nation, than a rupture of trust between him and the parliament, he had consented to pass the bill, according to their desire.

The opening of a new parliament promised much cordiality, and the commons in an address [1701] desired his majesty to enter into such negotiations with the States-General, and other potentates, which might most effectually conduce to the mutual satisfaction of Great Britain and the United Provinces, as well

as to the preservation of the peace of Europe. They also settled the succession, in case the princess Anna should die without issue, on Sophia of Hanover, and her heirs, being protestants.

The treaty of partition, however, into which William had entered with the court of France, for the division of the Spanish dominions, on the death of the reigning sovereign, gave great offence. Among the competitors for that crown, the dauphin, who had married the king of Spain's daughter, was to be allowed to possess the greatest part of Italy; and other allotments were made, which tended to lessen the danger of one person succeeding to too extensive dominions. In order to frustrate the objects of the confederacy, the king of Spain by will nominated the duke of Anjou, second son of the dauphin, heir to all his dominions; by which means he detached the French monarch from the union he had formed.

The parliament, in order to evince their resentment at the clandestine treaty of partition, ordered an impeachment of lord Somers, the earl of Orford; and the earl of Halifax, but the commons not appearing to prosecute, the three lords were acquitted; and William, encouraged by a petition from the county of Kent, and the general voice of the people, entered into a league with the emperor and the States-General, the principal objects of which were the recovery of the Spanish Netherlands, as a barrier for Holland, and of Milan for the emperor.

King James expired at St. Germain's, and was interred, at his own request, in the church of the English Benedictines in Paris, without any funeral solemnity. Before his death he was visited by the French monarch, who declared that he would acknowledge his son as king of England. Accordingly, when James died, the pretended prince of Wales was proclaimed king of England, and treated as such at the court of Versailles.

In his speech to the parliament, William enlarged on this indignity offered to the nation by the French king; and explained the dangers to which England was exposed by that monarch placing his grandson on the throne of Spain. In an address to his majesty, the commons voted that no peace should be conclu-

WILLIAM AND MARY.

ded with France, till reparation should be made to king and nation, for owning and declaring the pretended prince of Wales, king of England, Scotland and Ireland. They also voted a large supply; and agreed, that the proportion of the land forces, in conjunction with the allies, should be forty thousand men, and that forty thousand seamen should be employed for the service of the ensuing year.

The health of William had been declining for some time; but he endeavoured to conceal the infirmities which he felt were making in his constitution, lest that the allies might not be discouraged from engaging in a confederacy of which he was considered the chief. In riding to Hampton court from Kensington, his collar-bone was broken by a fall from a horse; and this hastened his dissolution. [1702] expired on the eighth day of March, of a violent cough and asthma, in the thirteenth year of his reign. His amiable consort, Mary, had fallen a victim to the small-pox a few years before.

William III. was in his person small and slender. He had an aquiline nose, a large forehead, and a commanding aspect. His genius was penetrating, and his judgment sound; but in his manners he was distant and reserved, better qualified to gain respect than love. He was religious, temperate, just, and sincere. England, in some respects, gained very much by the revolution, while in others, it was a severe sufferer. The system of borrowing money on remote funds, which was introduced in this reign, has been attended with the most pernicious consequences; and a standing army, which was first sanctioned by parliament in the time of William, now seems interwoven with the constitution; but when we consider the noble stand which William made for the freedom of Europe, against the ambitious projects and dangerous influence of France, we must acknowledge, that he possessed qualities of the first order, which entitle him to the applause and respect of mankind.

In 1694, the bank of England, and the salt-stamp-offices, were established.

CHAPTER VII.

The Reign of Queen Anne :

ANNE, princess of Denmark, the eldest surviving
 1702] daughter of James the Second, ascended the
 throne on the death of William, with the general satisfaction of all parties. She was now in the thirty-eighth year of her age, and by her husband, George, prince of Denmark, had a numerous offspring, all of which died in infancy, except the duke of Gloucester, who, after giving promises of future worth, was seized with a malignant fever, which put an end to his existence in the eleventh year of his age.

Anne had received great mortifications in the late reign ; but she conducted herself with so much discretion, that little or no pretence for censure or resentment could be alleged. The facility of her disposition, however, rendered her the dupe of interested and artful dependents ; and it was owing to this, that a serious misunderstanding had taken place between her and the late king and queen, which continued till the death of the latter. Anne had been taught to consider the tories as friends of the monarchy, and the true sons of the church ; and they had always professed an inviolable attachment to her person and interest.

The death of William excited the greatest consternation throughout Holland ; but the anxiety of the States-General was relieved, by the arrival of the earl of Marlborough, who assured them that her majesty would adhere to all the stipulations which had been entered into by the late king.

In her first speech to parliament, Anne made the most conciliatory declarations of her views and principles ; and in return, they settled on her, during life, the same revenue as had been enjoyed by the late king. When the bill, received the royal assent, the queen assured them, that one hundred thousand pounds of this revenue should be applied to the public service of the year.

When the subject of the intended war was debated in the queen's privy-council, the earl of Rochester, maternal uncle to the queen, proposed that the Eng-

lish should act only as auxiliaries, and that the chief burden of the war should be borne by the continental allies, who had most to fear from the power of France; but the earl of Marlborough observed, that France could never be reduced within due limits unless the English entered as principals in the quarrel. The opinion of Marlborough prevailed; and he was also appointed captain-general of her majesty's forces, to be employed in conjunction with the troops of the allies.

The Dutch too, to whom the earl had been sent ambassador-extraordinary, gave him the same appointment over their forces; and the allies having promised to furnish their quotas of troops, every thing was concerted for commencing the war, the avowed object of which, as far as concerned England, was to put the house of Austria in possession of the throne of Spain, and to procure a barrier for the Dutch in the Netherlands.

Marlborough, at the head of sixty thousand men, 1702] took the field in the month of July, and obliged the duke of Burgundy, who commanded the French army, to retire before the allied troops, and to leave Spanish-Guelderland exposed. The town and castle of Werk surrendered; Venlo capitulated; and Ruremonde was reduced after an obstinate defence. Boufflers, whom Burgundy had left in the command, confounded at the rapidity of Marlborough's success, retired towards Liege; but, at the approach of the confederates, he directed his march towards Brabant; and Marlborough took that city by assault, in which the allies found considerable public booty.

Meanwhile, the combined fleets of England and Holland, under the command of sir George Rooke, after an unsuccessful attack on Cadiz, captured the Spanish galleons at Vigo, with riches to the amount of seven million pieces of eight.

Marlborough, who arrived in England about the latter end of November, received the thanks of the house of commons for his great and signal services, which were so acceptable to the queen, that she created him a duke, and complimented him with a grant of five thousand pounds per annum out of the post-office. About the same time, the parliament settled the yearly sum of one hundred thousand pounds on George

prince of Denmark, the queen's consort, in case he should survive her.

In the next campaign, the duke of Marlborough, being unable to provoke marshal Villeroy to hazard a battle, was obliged to content himself with the capture of Bonne, Huy, Limburgh, and Guedres. The duke was restricted in his enterprises by the deputies of the States-General, who began to be influenced by the intrigues of the Louvestein faction.

In the beginning of next year, the duke of Marlborough assembled his army at Maestricht; and having concerted the plan of operations with the States, he crossed the Rhine at Coblenz. After effecting a junction with prince Eugene and the imperialists, the allied army, on the second day of July, attacked the Bavarians in their intrenchments at Donavert; and, after an obstinate resistance, succeeded in defeating the enemy, who left six thousand men dead on the field of battle.

The elector of Bavaria, being joined by marshal Tallard, crossed the Danube. The duke of Marlborough and prince Eugene found the enemy advantageously posted upon a hill near Hochstadt, their right being covered by the Danube and the village of Blenheim, their left by the village of Lutzingem, and their front by a rivulet, the banks of which were steep, and the bottom marshy. Notwithstanding these difficulties, the generals resolved to attack the French and Bavarians, whose army amounted to sixty thousand men. Marshal Tallard commanded on the right, and threw twenty-seven battalions, with twelve squadrons, into the village of Blenheim, where he supposed the allies would make their chief effort; their left was conducted by the elector of Bavaria, assisted by Marsin, a French general of experience.

The duke of Marlborough, taking advantage of the injudicious arrangement of his opponent, ordered the villages to be attacked by his infantry, and with his horse in person fell on the French cavalry, commanded by marshal Tallard. After several charges, the French horse were totally subdued, and driven into the Danube, where most of them perished; and ten battalions of foot were at the same time charged on

all sides, and cut to pieces. The elector of Bavaria made a resolute defence against prince Eugene, but, at length, was obliged to give way. The confederates being now masters of the field, surrounded the village of Blenheim; and the twenty-seven battalions and twelve squadrons, despairing of forcing their way through the allies, surrendered themselves prisoners of war.

Never was a victory more complete. Ten thousand French and Bavarians were left dead on the field of battle; the greater part of thirty squadrons of horse perished in the Danube; and thirteen thousand were made prisoners; and the enemy lost their camp equipage, baggage, and artillery. Marshal Tallard was taken prisoner. The allies concluded the campaign, with the capture of Landau and Trierbach.

Sir George Rooke, who had been sent with a squadron to Barcelona, made a sudden and successful attack on Gibraltar, and took possession of that important fortress, which has ever since belonged to England.

In the campaign of 1705, the object of the duke of Marlborough was to penetrate to France by the Moselle; but his operations were ill-seconded by prince Louis of Baden, who was suspected of treachery, or who was actuated by envy of the duke's military reputation. In the mean time, the French invested and took Huy, and besieged Liege; but Marlborough returning into the Netherlands, retook Huy, and obliged the French to abandon their enterprise against Liege. The English general, inflamed with a desire of achieving some action of importance, attacked the enemy in their lines, defeated the Bavarian cavalry with great slaughter, and obliged the infantry also to give way.

Meanwhile, an English fleet, with five thousand troops, under the command of the earl of Peterborough and sir Cloudesley Shovel, being joined by a Dutch squadron at Lisbon, and reinforced by a body of horse from the earl of Galway's army in Portugal, having taken the archduke Charles on board, directed its course to Catalonia. The troops were disembarked at Barcelona, and Charles landed amidst the acclamations of a countless multitude, who threw themselves at his feet, exclaiming, "Long live the king!"

Barcelona was compelled to capitulate; and the whole province of Catalonia declared for Charles, who now assumed the title of king of Spain, and took up his winter quarters in the heart of that country.

Villeroy, having received orders to act on the offensive, passed the Doyle, advanced to Tirlemont, 1706] and from thence to Ramilies, where he met the united army of the allies. Both sides prepared for battle. The duke of Marlborough ordered lieutenant-general Schultz, with twelve battalions, and twenty pieces of cannon, to attack the village of Ramilies, which was strongly fortified with artillery.

The main body of the enemy was speedily driven from the field; and the confederates obtained a complete victory. About eight thousand French and Bavarians were killed or wounded; and the allies captured the enemy's baggage and artillery, about one hundred and twenty colours or standards, six hundred officers, and six thousand private soldiers.

The entire conquest of Brabant, and almost all Spanish Flanders, was the immediate result of the battle of Ramilies. Louvaine, Mechlin, Brussels, Antwerp, Ghent, and Bruges, submitted without resistance; Ostend was obliged to capitulate; and the captures of Menin, Dendermonde, and Aeth, speedily followed.

In Spain, the French were also unsuccessful: and king Philip was obliged to raise the siege of Barcelona. The earl of Galway, advancing into Estremadura, took Alcantara, and marched to Madrid, which the English and Portuguese entered without resistance.

In Italy, the French were defeated by prince Eugene, at Turin, and the duke of Savoy entered his capital in triumph. The duke of Orleans retreated into Dauphine; while the French garrisons were expelled from every place they occupied in Piedmont and Italy, with the exception of Cremona, Valenza, and the castle of Milan, which were blockaded by the confederates.

In return for the great services which he had rendered his country, the commons, in an address, besought her majesty to consider the means by which the memory of the duke of Marlborough's noble actions might be perpetuated. The queen informed

them by a message, that she intended to grant to the duke, and his heirs, the interest of the crown in the honour and manor of Woodstock and the hundred of Wootton; and she desired the assistance of the house, in clearing from incumbrance the lieutenancy and rangership of the park, with the rents and profits of the manor and hundred, which had already been alienated for two lives. Accordingly, a bill was brought in and passed, enabling the queen to bestow the aforesaid honour and manor on the duke of Marlborough and his heirs; and her majesty was desired to advance the money for clearing the incumbrances. The queen not only complied with this address, but likewise ordered the comptroller of her works to build on Woodstock-park, the magnificent palace or castle of Blenheim, as a monument of the signal victory obtained by the duke of Marlborough near the village of that name.

Previously to this, the queen, with the concurrence of parliament, had alienated that branch of the revenue which arose from the first-fruits and tenths paid by the clergy, and vested it in trustees for the augmentation of small livings. At the same time, the statute of mortmain was repealed, so far as to allow all persons to bestow by will, or grant by deed, what they should think fit for the increase of benefices.

The union between England and Scotland, which was effected about this time, was an event more glorious and beneficial than the most splendid success of the British arms. This measure, however, imperiously urged by wisdom, was violently opposed by popular prejudice in Scotland; but, at length, the two kingdoms were united under one legislature, and one
1707] government; and the union, though unpromising in its origin, has been productive of happiness and prosperity to both kingdoms.

In the mean time, Louis, whose pride had been greatly humbled by the victories of the duke of Marlborough, and the exertions of the English, offered peace on the following terms: That Milan, Naples, and Sicily, should be given to the archduke; that a barrier in the Netherlands should be allowed to the Dutch; and that the duke of Savoy should be indemnified for the ravages committed in his dominions.

In return for these concessions, he demanded the quiet possession of the throne of Spain, the Indies to his grandson, Philip V., and the restitution of Bavaria to its native prince.

These offers, however, were rejected, and the character of the duke of Marlborough was at this time so high in the nation, that both houses of parliament renewed their thanks to him, passed a bill to perpetuate his titles in the female as well as in the male line, and readily voted supplies for prosecuting the war.

But, notwithstanding all his grace's abilities and influence, he could not escape the envy which too frequently attends on transcendent talents and uninterrupted success. Mrs. Masham, a distant relation of the duchess of Marlborough, who had, from this connexion, obtained the office of woman of the bed-chamber, succeeded to that ascendancy over the mind of her sovereign, which the duchess had long maintained. This favourite was more obliging than her benefactress, who had frequently opposed the wishes of the queen; and in political intrigues, she acted as auxiliary to Mr. Robert Harley, who had been appointed secretary of state, and who determined to destroy the credit of the duke of Marlborough and the earl of Godolphin. His intention was to unite the Tories under his own auspices, and expel the Whigs from the administration; and, in this scheme, he was assisted by Henry St. John, afterwards lord Bolingbroke, a man of elegant taste and an aspiring mind, whose talents, however, were rather specious than profound, and whose principles were loose and unsettled.

The duke of Marlborough and the earl of Godolphin, apprized of the secret intrigues which Mr. Harley carried on with Mrs. Masham, informed the queen, that they could serve her no longer, if that minister were continued in his office of secretary. The queen endeavoured to appease their resentment, but in vain; and she was obliged to remove Mr. Harley from his office; but her majesty was indignant at the conduct of the duke and the earl of Godolphin, from whom she withdrew her confidence.

At this period, the nation was alarmed with a threatened invasion from France, in favour of the Pretender, or the chevalier St. George, as he was

called. The queen communicated to the commons the advice which she had received of the destination of the French armament; and both houses immediately joined in a loyal and affectionate address on this occasion: the habeas corpus act was suspended; the Pretender and his adherents were proclaimed traitors and rebels; and a bill was passed, discharging the clans of Scotland, where it was expected the Chevalier would land, from all vassalage to those chiefs who should arm against her majesty.

Preparations for this expedition were made at Dunkirk, where a fleet was assembled under count Fourbin, and a body of land forces embarked; and this armament, after leaving Dunkirk, directed its course for Scotland. Sir George Byng, who had received advice of its departure from the coast of France, pursued the enemy with an English squadron so closely, that both fleets arrived in the Frith of Forth almost at the same time; when the French commander, despairing of success, and unwilling to try the issue of a battle, took advantage of a land-breeze, and sailed away. The Pretender desired to be set on shore at Inverness; but this being found impracticable, the Chevalier and his general returned to Dunkirk.

The duke of Marlborough, with his usual success, 1708] defeated the French near Oudenarde. In this battle, the French had about three thousand men killed in the field, and seven thousand taken prisoners. After obtaining this victory, the allies invested Lisle, the strongest place in Flanders, and the bulwark of the French barrier. Prince Eugene commanded, and the duke of Marlborough covered and sustained the siege. The garrison was numerous, and was commanded by a marshal of France; but nothing could resist bravery and skill united. The enemy assembled all their forces, and marched to the relief of the place, but were only spectators to its fall. The duke obliged the elector of Bavaria, to raise the siege of Brussels; and retook Ghent and Burges, which had been lost by treachery.

On the twenty-eighth of October of this year, died George prince of Denmark, a personage who possessed all the amiable qualities of his consort, but who was devoid of great talents and ambition. At his

death, the earl of Pembroke was created lord-high-admiral, the earl of Wharton was promoted to the government of Ireland, and lord Somers appointed president of the council. Notwithstanding the advancement of these whig noblemen, the duke of Marlborough continued to decline in his credit with the queen, who privately consulted, and placed her chief confidence in Mr. Harley, though the latter held no ostensible situation in the administration.

Meanwhile the duke of Savoy, by making himself master of the important fortresses of Exilles, La Perouse, the valley of St. Martin, and Fenestrells, had not only secured a barrier to his own frontiers, but opened a way into the French provinces on the side of Dauphiné; while the possession of Lisle exposed that monarchy on the side of the Netherlands.

During this campaign, major-general Stanhope, with three thousand men, having landed on the island of Minorca, took fort St. Philip in three days; and the garrison of fort Fornelles having surrendered themselves prisoners to admiral sir John Leake, the whole island submitted to the English government.

By this time the pride of Louis was humbled, and he once more made proposals of peace to the Dutch; but the States immediately communicated his proposals to the courts of Vienna and London; and the emperor appointed prince Eugene of Savoy, and Great Britain the duke of Marlborough, as their respective plenipotentiaries. The allies, however, rendered insolent by conquest, made demands which were considered extravagant by the French monarch, who, gathering resolution from despair, published them and his own concessions; and the people, animated with the desire of defending their king and country, displayed extraordinary efforts in preparing to resist the tremendous power of the enemy.

The allies on their side, were equally active. Marlborough and prince Eugene proceeded to Flanders; and the allied army assembled on the plain of Lisle, to the number of one hundred and ten thousand men. Tournay soon fell, and the siege of Mons was formed. The French army, amounting to one hundred and
1709] twenty thousand men, were posted in the neighbourhood of Malplaquet. In the night of the

tenth of September, the two armies arrayed themselves in order of battle; and about eight o'clock the next morning, one of the most furious contests that had taken place in this war commenced. The battle was maintained with the most determined courage on both sides. The French fought with an obstinacy bordering on despair, till seeing their lines forced, and their general dangerously wounded, they retreated in good order, and took post between Quesnoy and Valenciennes. The field of battle was abandoned to the confederates, with about forty colours and standards, sixteen pieces of artillery, and a number of prisoners; but it was the dearest victory the allies had ever purchased. About twenty thousand of their best troops were killed in the engagement, while the enemy did not lose half that number. The battle of Malplaquet, however, was followed by the surrender of Mons; and this achievement terminated the campaign. Some attempts at negotiation were again made by Louis; but in proportion to his concessions, the allies rose in their demands.

During this campaign the military operations in Spain and Portugal were unfavourable to the allies. The castle of Alicant, garrisoned by two English regiments, had been besieged during a whole winter. At length, the commander of the besieging forces ordered the rock on which the castle was situated to be undermined; and colonel Syburgh, the governor, was informed, that it was intended to spring the mine, if he did not surrender in twenty-four hours. Syburgh, however, refused to comply; and the rock being split by the explosion, the colonel and several officers were swallowed up in the opening, which immediately closed upon them; but, notwithstanding this terrible accident, the garrison persisted in its defence, till the arrival of general Stanhope, who procured an honourable capitulation.

Henry Sacheverell, a man of very moderate talents, but of a busy and meddling disposition, in a sermon preached at St. Paul's on the fifth day of November, took occasion to inveigh with bitterness against the ministry, the dissenters, and the low church: he defended the doctrine of non-resistance, and declaring religion to be in danger, exhorted the people to stand

up in defence of the church. This sermon being printed, was speedily dispersed over the kingdom; and Mr. Dolben, son of the late archbishop of York, complained of it to the house of commons, in consequence of which Sacheverell was taken into custody and impeached.

The attention of the whole kingdom was fixed on this extraordinary trial, though neither the man nor his publication deserved any other than silent contempt. The trial continued for three weeks; and a vast multitude attended Sacheverell every day to and from Westminster-hall, praying for his deliverance as if he had been a martyr. The queen's sedan was surrounded by the populace, who exclaimed, "God bless your majesty and the church; we hope your majesty is for Sacheverell." They abused and insulted all who would not join in the cry of "the church and Sacheverell;" destroyed several meeting-houses, and plundered the dwellings of eminent dissenters.

Sacheverell was found guilty by a majority of seventeen voices; he was prohibited from preaching for the term of three years; and his sermon was ordered to be burnt in the presence of the lord-mayor and the sheriffs of London, before whom it had been delivered. The lenity of the sentence, which was in a great measure owing to a dread of the popular fury, was celebrated as a triumph over the whigs.

The French king, sensible that the misery of his
1710] people daily increased by the continuance of the war, again made overtures for peace; but finding that the allies would not listen to reasonable or honourable terms, and hoping that the approaching change in the English ministry might be productive of advantage to him, he resolved to await the events of another campaign. The duke of Marlborough, however, still continued his successes. He took Douay, Bethune, Venant, and Aire, which opened a free passage into the heart of France. On the Rhine, the campaign produced no military event; and, in Spain, both parties were by turns conquerors and conquered.

In England, the effects of those intrigues which had been formed against the whig ministers, began to appear. The trial of Sacheverell had excited a popular spirit of aversion to those who favoured the dissent-

ers; and the queen expressed her attachment to the tories, by mortifying the duke of Marlborough, whose interest was not sufficient to prevent the dismissal of his own son-in-law, the earl of Sunderland, from the office of secretary of state. Harley became sole minister, and was created earl of Oxford and Mortimer.

The new ministry, however, had not yet determined to supersede Marlborough in the command of the army. In the next campaign, prince Eugene acted in Germany, and the duke of Marlborough was again opposed by Marshal Villars, who had assembled a numerous army, and which he encamped in a strong position behind the river Sanset. Villars boasted, that the French lines were impregnable; but the duke of Marlborough entered these lines without the loss of a single soldier; and he afterwards reduced the strong town of Bouchain in the very sight of the French army, which was superior to his own, and made the garrison, consisting of six thousand men, prisoners of war.

This was the last memorable military service performed by the duke of Marlborough. The ministers took every method which envy and malice could suggest, to exasperate the nation against the duke, who had supported so nobly the glory of England, humbled the pride and checked the ambition of France, secured the liberty of Europe, and, as it were, chained victory to his chariot-wheels. Of Marlborough it has been justly observed, that he never laid siege to a town which he did not take, or fought a battle which he did not win. His understanding was as injurious to France as his military abilities; and he was equally famous in the cabinet as in the field.

Such, however, is the violent conduct of faction, that this consummate general and statesman was ridiculed in public libels, and reviled in private conversation. He was represented as guilty of fraud, avarice, and extortion, and traduced as the meanest of mankind. Even his courage was called in question; and he was accused of insolence, ambition, and misconduct. When his enemies had become ministers, the same parliament, which had so often before voted him thanks for the great and important services he had performed, now determined, by a large majority, that

some of his practices had been unwarrantable and illegal; and on the strength of these resolutions, originating solely from party motives, the queen dismissed him from all his employments, and the command was given to the duke of Ormond.

By the death of Joseph, emperor of Germany, his brother, the archduke Charles, became possessed of all the hereditary states of the empire; and soon after being elected emperor, the object of the war was certainly changed; for his accession to the thrones of both Germany and Spain would have effectually destroyed that balance of power, for the maintenance of which so much blood had been spilt.

A congress was, therefore, appointed at Utrecht; and, after negotiations had been long carried on at that place, peace was signed, March 31, 1713, by all the belligerent powers, except the emperor. By the treaty of Utrecht, Spain and the Indies were confirmed to Philip; but the Netherlands and the Spanish dominions in Italy were separated from that monarchy. Naples, Sardinia, and Milan were bestowed on the emperor; and Sicily, with the title of king, was given to the duke of Savoy. The Dutch had a barrier assigned them against France in the Netherlands; while all that Great Britain gained, after so glorious a war, and so many splendid victories, was the demolition of Dunkirk, and the possession of Gibraltar and Minorca.

The ambition of St. John, lord viscount Bolingbroke, would not allow him to act a subordinate part under Harley, earl of Oxford; and the former had insinuated himself into the confidence of Mrs. Masham, whom the latter had displeased. By means of that lady, Bolingbroke was confirmed in the good opinion of the queen, while Oxford in proportion lost the favour of his sovereign. The queen, harassed by discordant counsels, and perceiving her constitution giving way, was supposed by some to form real designs of securing the succession to her brother; and it was strongly suspected, that Bolingbroke was attached to the same interest, and encouraged her majesty with the most flattering hopes of success.

After the peace had received the sanction of parliament, the two rivals, unrestrained by the tie of common danger, gave a loose to their mutual animosity;

and a very acrimonious dialogue passed, on the 27th of July, between Mrs. Masham, Oxford, and Bolingbroke, in the presence of the queen. Soon after, Oxford was deprived of his badge of office; but as no provision had been made for supplying his place, confusion and disorder ensued at court.

The fatigue of attending a long cabinet-council held on this occasion, and the altercation which passed, between the ministers at the board, so agitated and affected the queen's spirits, that she was immediately seized with an apoplectic disorder, which baffled all the power of medicine. Her majesty continued in a [1714] lethargic insensibility, with short intervals, till her death, which took place on the first day of August, in the fiftieth year of her age, and the thirteenth of her reign.

Anne was of the middle size, and well proportioned; her countenance was round, her features regular, her complexion ruddy, and her hair a dark brown. In domestic life, she was a pattern of conjugal affection, and a tender mother. She wanted, however, the vigour of mind requisite to preserve her independence, and to free her from the snares of favourites; but the virtues of her heart were never doubted; and notwithstanding the party feuds which embittered her repose, and disturbed her reign, she was personally beloved by her people. In a word, though her abilities were unequal to the high station which she filled, and her attachment to favourites was injurious to her government and the nation, she was a humane and munificent sovereign, and well deserved the title, which her subjects gave her, of "the good queen Anne."

CHAPTER VIII.

The Reign of George I.

If providence had granted a longer life to Anne, and the daring and ambitious St. John had continued to influence her councils, there seems reason to suppose that attempts would have been made to restore the hereditary line. Certain it is, that the friends of

the Pretender derived great hopes from the ministry of Bolingbroke ; but the sudden death of the queen, by destroying the expectations of the jacobites, put an end to their present machinations, and thus removed the fears and apprehensions of the whigs.

Agreeably to the Act of Settlement passed in the 1714] reign of William, George I., elector of Hanover, descended by his mother from Elizabeth, daughter of James I., was proclaimed king in due form, the very day of the queen's death, and the submission of the three kingdoms was as universal, as if no pretended claim existed.

At the time of his ascending the throne of Great Britain, George was in the fifty-fifth year of his age. In about six weeks, he landed at Greenwich, where he was received by the lords of the regency ; and, on the twentieth day of October following, he was crowned at Westminster, with the usual solemnity.

The hopes and fears of both the whigs and tories were great at this time ; but the new sovereign had been prepossessed against the latter ; and his majesty effected an instantaneous and total change in all important offices under government. The duke of Ormond was dismissed from his command, which the king restored to the duke of Marlborough, with several new appointments ; the earl of Nottingham was declared president of the council ; the great-seal was given to lord Cowper ; the privy-seal to the earl of Wharton ; and the vice-royalty of Ireland to the earl of Sunderland. Lord Townshend and Mr. Stanhope were appointed secretaries of state ; Mr. Pulteney secretary at war ; and Mr. Walpole, who had undertaken to manage the house of commons, was made paymaster to the army. The post of secretary for Scotland was bestowed on the duke of Montrose ; and the duke of Argyle was appointed commander in chief of the forces in that country. Thus the whigs obtained an ascendancy both in and out of parliament.

Meanwhile, the malcontents in England were considerably increased by the king's attachment to the whigs ; and dangerous tumults were raised in different parts of the kingdom. The Pretender took this opportunity to transmit copies of a printed manifesto to various noblemen of the first distinction. In this

declaration, he mentioned the good intentions of his sister towards him, which had been prevented by her death; and observed, that his people had proclaimed for their king a foreign prince, contrary to the laws of hereditary right, which no act could abrogate.

When the parliament met, the earl of Oxford, the duke of Ormond, the earl of Strafford, and lord Bolingbroke, were impeached, on account of the parts which they had acted in regard to the peace of Utrecht. Bolingbroke fled to the continent, and was followed by Ormond; but though Oxford, Prior, and some others, were taken into custody, they all escaped punishment. Ormond and Bolingbroke, not surrendering themselves within the time appointed, the house of lords ordered their names to be erased from the list of peers; and inventories were taken of their personal estates. It is impossible to reflect on the ruin of the noble family of Ormond, in the person of a brave and humane nobleman, whose only crime was obedience to the commands of his sovereign, without feeling the greatest indignation against those who were the promoters of such iniquitous proceedings.

The spirit of discontent daily increased in England; and notwithstanding the proclamations against riots, several tumults were raised in the cities of London and Westminster. A trifling incident served to augment the public ferment. The shirts allowed to the first regiment of guards, commanded by the duke of Marlborough, were so coarse, that the soldiers could scarcely be persuaded to wear them. Some of the shirts were thrown into the garden of the king's palace, and into that which belonged to the duke of Marlborough; and a detachment, in marching through the city, produced them to the people, exclaiming, "These are the Hanover shirts."

Tumults were raised in Staffordshire, and other parts of the kingdom; and the house of commons presented an address to the king, desiring that the laws might be executed with vigour against rioters. They also passed a new act, by which it was decreed, that if any persons, to the number of twelve, unlawfully assembled, should continue together one hour after having been required to disperse by a justice of peace or other officer. and had heard the proclamation

against riots read in public, they should be deemed guilty of felony without benefit of clergy.

The king having informed both houses that a rebellion had actually commenced, and that the nation was threatened with a foreign invasion, the parliament immediately passed a law, empowering his majesty to secure suspected persons, and to suspend the habeas corpus act. About this period, the royal assent was given to an act for encouraging loyalty in Scotland. By this law, the tenant who continued peaceable, while his lord took arms in favour of the Pretender, was invested with the property of the lands he rented; on the other hand, it decreed that the lands possessed by any person guilty of high-treason should revert to the superior of whom they were held; and a clause was added for summoning all suspected persons to find bail for their good behaviour. By virtue of this clause, all the heads of the jacobite clans, and other suspected persons, were summoned to Edinburgh; and those who neglected to appear, were declared rebels.

The disaffected, both in England and Scotland, held private consultations with the jacobites; and the Chevalier St. George was assured, that the whole nation was dissatisfied with the new government. Resolving to take advantage of this favourable disposition, the Chevalier applied to the French king, who supplied him with the means of fitting out a small armament in the port of Havre; but the death of Louis, which happened at this time, was highly detrimental to his interests; and the duke of Orleans, on whom the regency of the kingdom devolved, adopted a new system of politics, and entered into the strictest alliance with the king of Great Britain.

The partisans of the Pretender, however, had gone too far to recede. The earl of Mar, assembling three hundred of his vassals, proclaimed the Chevalier at Castletown, and on the sixth of September, set up his standard at Bræ-Mar. Then assuming the title of lieutenant-general of the Pretender's forces, he published a declaration, exhorting the people to arm for their lawful sovereign; and this was followed by a manifesto, in which the national grievances were enumerated and aggravated, and the people promised redress.

Meanwhile, the duke of Argyle set out for Scotland, as commander-in-chief of the forces in North Britain; and the earl of Sutherland set sail for that country, to raise his vassals in defence of his liege sovereign. Other heads of clans did the same; and it was soon evident, that the voice of Scotland was far from being general in favour of the Pretender.

In the North of England, however, the Earl of Derwentwater and Mr. Foster took the field with a body of horse, and being joined by some gentlemen from the borders, proclaimed the Chevalier in Warkworth, Morpeth, and Alnwick. After an ineffectual attempt on Newcastle, they retired northwards, and being reinforced by a body of troops under lords Kenmuir, Carnwath, and Wintown, the insurgents advanced to Kelso, where they were joined by Mackintosh, who had crossed the Forth with a body of highlanders.

A council of war being called, the rebels determined to re-enter England by the western border. At Brampton, Foster opened his commission of general, and proclaimed the Pretender. They continued their march to Penrith, where the sheriff, assisted by lord Lonsdale and the bishop of Carlisle, had assembled the posse comitatus of Cumberland, amounting to twelve thousand men, who fled at the approach of this small army. From Penrith, the insurgents proceeded by the way of Kendal and Lancaster to Preston, of which they took possession without opposition.

General Willis marched against the rebels, with six regiments of horse and one battalion of foot, and had advanced to the bridge of Ribble, before Foster received intelligence of their approach. At first, the king's troops met with a warm reception, but being reinforced next day with three regiments of dragoons, under general Carpenter, the town was invested on all sides. The rebels now proposed to capitulate, but the general refusing to treat, they surrendered at discretion. The noblemen and leaders were secured, and sent prisoners to London. Some of them were tried by the martial-law and executed; and the common men were imprisoned at Chester and Liverpool, till the pleasure of government respecting them should be known.

The very day on which the rebels surrendered at

Preston, was fought the battle of Dumblaine, between the duke of Argyle and the earl of Mar. The duke's army was far inferior in point of numbers; but he obtained the advantage, though both sides claimed the victory.

In this desperate situation of his affairs, the Chevalier, embarking in a small vessel at Dunkirk, landed at Perhead on the twenty-second of December, and proceeded to Fetterosse, where, being joined by the earls of Mar and Marischal, and about thirty noblemen and gentlemen of the first quality, he was proclaimed king. His declaration, dated at Commercy, was printed and circulated through all the adjacent counties; and he received addresses from the episcopal clergy, and the laity of that communion in Aberdeenshire. On the fifth of January he made his public entry into Dundee; and, on the 17th, he arrived at 1716] Scone, where he assumed all the functions of royalty, and fixed his coronation for the 23d of the same month.

This dream of royalty, however, was of short duration. In a council, at which all the chiefs of his party assisted, it was determined to abandon the enterprise, as they were destitute of money, arms and ammunition, and as they were beginning to be hemmed in by the king's army. The Chevalier, being hotly pursued by the duke of Argyle, was glad to embark on board a French vessel which lay in the harbour of Montrose, from whence he sailed to France, accompanied by Mar, Melfort, Drummond, Bulkeley, and other persons of distinction.

The rebellion being thus suppressed, the commons impeached the nobility who had been engaged in this affair; but of them the earl of Derwentwater and lord Kenmuir alone suffered death; and few of the lower ranks were executed in comparison with the number found guilty. About one thousand, who submitted to the king's mercy, petitioned for transportation, and were sent to America.

The ministry, sensible of the unpopularity of their measures, and fearing the effects of a new parliament, determined to repeal the triennial act, and by a new law to extend the term of parliaments to seven years. Accordingly, on the 10th of April, the

duke of Devonshire brought a bill into the house of lords for enlarging the continuance of parliaments, which was supported by all the whig party; and though it was strenuously opposed by the earls of Nottingham, Abingdon, and Paulet, it passed by a great majority; and, in the lower house, it met with the same success.

The Spanish king having taken Sardinia, and invaded Sicily, Great Britain, France, Holland, and the emperor, formed a quadruple alliance against his catholic majesty. Bremen, and Verdun, which had been purchased with the money of England, were secured to Hanover, contrary to the act of settlement in the reign of king William. Admiral sir George Byng sailed, with twenty ships of the line, for the Mediterranean; and, on the eleventh of August, he met with, 1718] off cape Passaro, on the southeast point of Sicily, the Spanish fleet, consisting of twenty-seven sail. An engagement ensued, in which sir George took or destroyed the greatest part of the hostile armament.

The Spaniards now formed a scheme in favour of the Pretender, and sent a squadron, with six thousand regular troops and twelve thousand stand of arms, under the duke of Ormond, to invade Great Britain. The Spanish fleet, however, was dispersed by a violent storm, which defeated the intended expedition; but two frigates arrived in Scotland, with the earls Marischal and Seaforth, the marquis of Tullibardine, and three hundred Spaniards. These being attacked by general Wightman, were entirely defeated. Soon after, lord Cobham made a descent on Spain, and took Vigo; and his catholic majesty acceded to the quadruple alliance, which, indeed, was chiefly in favour of the emperor, who was desirous of adding Sicily to his other Italian dominions.

On the royal recommendation to the commons to 1719] take the national debt into consideration, a scheme was formed, called the South-Sea act, which was productive of the greatest mischief and infatuation. The scheme was projected by sir John Blount, who had been bred a scrivener, and who proposed to discharge the national debt, by reducing all the funds into one. The bank and South-Sea company bade against each other; and the terms of the lat-

ter were so advantageous, that government closed with them.

While the matter was in agitation, the stock of the company rose from one hundred and thirty to nearly four hundred; and though the Mississippi scheme of Law had ruined many thousand families in France, in 1720] the preceding year, the people of England were so infatuated that the example did not operate as a warning. Blount imposed on the whole nation, which was seized with a kind of delirium. The projector and his associates pretended, that Gibraltar and Port Mahon would be exchanged for some places in Peru, by which means the English trade to the South-Sea would be protected and enlarged: the directors opened their books for a subscription of one million, at the rate of three hundred pounds for one hundred capital stock; and such was the eagerness of the multitude to subscribe, that in five days two millions were entered in the books, and stock advanced to double the price of the first payment.

By a promise of high dividends, and other artifices, the South-Sea stock was raised to one thousand. Exchange-alley was daily filled with an infatuated crowd of all ranks; but in the course of a few weeks the stock fell to one hundred and fifty; and the ebb of this tide of hope was so violent, as to overwhelm in ruin an infinite number of families. Public credit sustained a terrible shock. The principal actors in this nefarious undertaking were punished by parliament, and measures were adopted for giving some redress to the injured parties.

In the beginning of May, it was reported, that the king had received from the duke of Orleans information of a conspiracy against his person and government. In consequence, a camp was immediately formed in Hyde park; all military officers were ordered to repair to their respective posts; troops were sent from Ireland; the states of Holland were desired to have their auxiliary forces ready to be embarked; and some suspected persons were apprehended in Scotland.

Among the individuals supposed to be implicated in this treasonable conspiracy were Atterbury, bishop of Rochester; the earl of Orrery, the lords North and

Grey, Cochrane and Smith, from Scotland; Christopher Layer, a young gentleman of the Temple; George Kelly, an Irish clergyman; Cotton, Bingley, and Fleetwood, Englishmen; and one Naynoe, an Irish priest. All these were taken into custody, and committed to different prisons.

On the meeting of the new parliament, his majesty informed them of the nature and extent of the plot, which, he said, if it had not been timely discovered, would have involved the whole nation, and particularly the city of London, in blood and confusion. The parliament suspended the *habeas corpus* act for a year; but the opposition in the house of commons was so violent, that Mr. Robert Walpole, the prime-minister, endeavoured to rouse their apprehensions by informing them of a design to seize the bank and exchequer, and to proclaim the Pretender on the Royal Exchange. To corroborate the whole, an original and printed copy of a declaration, signed by the Pretender at Lucca, was laid before the house. In this curious paper, the Chevalier expatiated on the grievances of England, and very gravely proposed, that if king George would relinquish the throne of Great Britain, he would, in return, bestow on him the title of king in his native dominions, and secure to him the succession to the British sceptre, whenever, in due course, his natural right should take place.

The commons prepared a bill for raising one hundred thousand pounds on the real and personal estates of papists, towards defraying the expenses incurred by the late rebellion and disorders; and all persons of that faith in Scotland were called upon to register their names and real estates.

These acts were followed by the trial, conviction, and execution of Layer. Against the lords who had been arrested, no evidence appeared, or at least was produced; but Atterbury, bishop of Rochester, had rendered himself too conspicuous to escape punishment. On mere conjecture and hearsay evidence, a bill of pains and penalties passed the lower house against him, and was sent up to the lords, when the trial commenced. Nothing could be proved against him, except the uncertain evidence of the clerks of the post-office; yet the bishop was deprived of all

offices, benefices, and dignities, and rendered incapable of enjoying any for the future: he was also banished the realm, and subjected to the penalty of death in case he should return; and all persons who should correspond with him in his exile, were declared guilty of a capital offence.

The remainder of the reign of George the First presents little to excite attention. Intricate and contradictory treaties, most of which were inimical to the interests of this country, form the principal subjects of this portion of English history.

The king was suddenly seized with a paralytic disorder, on the road from Holland to Hanover, and was conveyed in a state of insensibility to Osnaburgh, 1727] June, in the sixty-eighth year of his age, and the thirteenth of his reign.

George I. was plain in his person, and simple in his address. His deportment was grave and composed, though he could be easy and familiar in the hours of relaxation. Before he ascended the throne of Great Britain, he was considered an able and experienced general, a just and merciful prince, and a consummate politician. With these qualities, his disposition to govern England, according to the regulations of the British constitution, cannot be disputed; and if ever he appeared to deviate from these principles, we readily allow, that the blame does not attach to him, but to his ministers, by whose venal suggestions he was misled.

George I. married the princess Sophia Dorothy, daughter of the duke of Zell, from whom he separated before he came to England.

CHAPTER IX.

The Reign of George II.

On the 14th day of June, an account was received of the late king's death, when the prince of Wales repaired from Richmond to Leicester-house, where a privy-council was held, and next day, George I. was proclaimed king with the usual solem-

nicities. His majesty declared his firm purpose to preserve the constitution in church and state, and to adhere to those alliances into which his father had entered. At the same time, he took and subscribed the oath for the security of the church of Scotland, as required by the act of union; and he continued all the great officers of state in their places.

In his speech to both houses, on the opening of the parliament, the king professed a fixed resolution to merit the love and affection of his people, by maintaining them in the full enjoyment of their religious and civil rights, and by studying to lessen the expenses of government on every occasion.

Sir Robert Walpole followed these gracious assurances, by moving that the entire revenue of the civil list, which produced about eight hundred thousand pounds per annum, should be settled on the king during life; and though Mr. Shippen and other patriots opposed any increase of the royal revenue, as inconsistent with the trust reposed in them, the motion was carried by a great majority; and a liberal provision was made for the queen, in case she should survive his majesty. In short, the two houses of parliament seemed to vie with each other in expressing their attachment to the new king; and, for a time, all parties appeared to be united in affection to his person, and in submission to the proposals of his ministers.

Sir Robert Walpole, though he disclaimed any intention of promoting a general excise, expatiated on the benefits which would accrue to the nation by a partial measure of that nature, and prevent numberless frauds on the public and the fair trader. The speech of the minister was followed by a motion, that a partial excise on tobacco should be levied. This measure met with a violent opposition, as well from the consideration of the train of dependants it would
1733] produce, as from the dread of its extension to other articles; and the ferment became so great throughout the nation, that though the minister had a triumphant majority of sixty-one in the house of commons, he was obliged to waive the advantage, and abandon the scheme.

Ever since the treaty of Seville, in 1729, the Spaniards in America had almost incessantly insulted and

distressed the commerce of Great Britain. They disputed the right of the English to cut logwood in the bay of Campeachy, and gather salt on the island of Tortugas, though that right was acknowledged in all the treaties concluded between the two nations. The captains of their armed vessels, called guarda-costas, made a practice of boarding and plundering English ships, on pretence of searching for contraband goods; and various other acts of cruelty and injustice were committed. In particular, one captain Jenkins, master of a Scottish merchant-ship, was boarded by the commander of a Spanish guarda-costa, who insulted Jenkins with the most opprobrious invectives, and tore off one of his ears, which he bade him carry to his king, and tell him that the Spaniards would serve him in the same manner, if an opportunity should present itself.

These outrages were loudly and justly complained of. Petitions from different parts of the kingdom were presented to the lower house; and the relief of parliament was earnestly implored against these acts of violence. Sir John Barnard moved, that all the memorials and papers relative to the Spanish depredations should be laid before the commons; and though Sir Robert Walpole proposed some alteration, he was obliged to comply.

The minister, however, was either fond of peace, or afraid that war would endanger his administration. Every endeavour, therefore, to prevent a rupture with Spain was industriously employed; and at last a convention was concluded and ratified, by which [1738] the king of Spain bound himself to pay, within a limited time, the sum of ninety-five thousand pounds, to be employed in discharging the demands of British subjects on the crown of Spain. This measure, however, excited great indignation; and Mr. William Pitt, who afterwards rendered himself so illustrious by his eloquence, his virtues, and his talents, declaimed against the convention, as insecure, unsatisfactory, and dishonourable to Great Britain.

The Spaniards not fulfilling the agreement into which they had entered, letters of marque and reprisal were granted against Spain; a large fleet was assembled at Spithead; the land forces were augmented; and an embargo was laid on all merchant vessels. Af-

1739] ter another fruitless attempt to negotiate, war was at last formally declared.

Admiral Vernon having affirmed, in the house of commons, that he could take Porto Bello, on the Spanish Main, with six ships, was despatched thither, and actually performed this hazardous service, almost without opposition. On the arrival of this news, the two houses of parliament joined in an address of congratulation on the success of his majesty's arms; and the commons granted all the necessary supplies for carrying on the war.

The minister, however, was become extremely unpopular. War was not the sphere of sir Robert Walpole. Expensive expeditions were projected, without producing any corresponding effect; and the enemy was unmolested in proceeding from one port to another. In consequence, the minister was attacked in the house of commons with much asperity; and though he contrived to retain his situation, it was evident that his administration was verging towards a close.

Charles VI., emperor of Germany, and the last 1740] male sovereign of the house of Austria, died at Vienna, and was succeeded in his hereditary dominions by his eldest daughter, the archduchess Maria Theresa, married to the grand duke of Tuscany; but, though this princess became queen of Hungary, by virtue of the pragmatic sanction, the restless ambition of her neighbours would not suffer her to enjoy those possessions which had been guaranteed by all the powers of Europe. Frederick, the young and aspiring king of Prussia, was no sooner informed of the emperor's death, than he laid claim to Silesia, which he entered at the head of twenty thousand men. At the same time, the elector of Bavaria, refused to acknowledge the archduchess as queen of Hungary and Bohemia, alleging, that he himself had legitimate pretensions to these dominions. Thus a war was kindled in Germany; and the archduchess made requisition of twelve thousand men, stipulated by treaty to be furnished her by England.

In the present posture of affairs, men could be less conveniently spared than money; and sir Robert Walpole moved, that two hundred thousand pounds should be granted in aid to the queen of Hungary. The

tion passed, though not without opposition; and the house resolved, that three hundred thousand pounds should be granted to his majesty to enable him to assist the archduchess.

An attempt was made on Carthage by sir Chaloner Ogle, and admiral Vernor; but it failed of success, and was attended with the loss of many men, the greatest part of whom were martyrs to the season, and the climate. Another unsuccessful expedition to Cuba finished the losses and the disgraces of this campaign. The nation complained loudly of these miscarriages; and the general discontent had a great effect on the election of members for the new parliament. Notwithstanding all the ministerial influence, the party of opposition evidently prevailed. The adherents of the minister began to tremble; and sir Robert Walpole knew, that the majority of a single vote would commit him prisoner to the Tower. After endeavouring in vain to bring over the prince of Wales to his party, 1741] he prudently meditated a retreat; and the king having adjourned both houses of parliament, in the mean time sir Robert Walpole was created earl of Oxford, and resigned all his employments, after being a minister for twenty years.

The change in the ministry was celebrated with public rejoicings; yet, if the character of Walpole be candidly appreciated, we shall find less to censure than to praise. That he carried his measures by venal influence must be allowed, and this is the greatest stain that attaches to his character; but those who suffered themselves to be corrupted, were at least equally blameable. When, however, we contemplate his aversion to war, and his disinterested conduct, when so much was at his disposal, we cannot deny him the tribute of our applause.

In the new administration, the duke of Newcastle 1742] and Mr. Pelham retained their former situations. Mr. Sandys succeeded sir Robert Walpole as chancellor of the exchequer; and the earl of Wilmington was appointed first lord of the treasury, in the room of the ex-minister. Lord Carteret became secretary of state for the foreign department; and Mr. Pulteney, who refused any official situation, was sworn a privy-council, and soon after created earl of

It soon, however, appeared, that those who had declaimed the loudest for the liberties of their country, had been actuated solely by sordid or ridiculous motives. The people complained, that, instead of a change of men and measures, the old ministry was strengthened by this coalition; and they branded the new converts as apostates and betrayers of their country.

The parliament voted one hundred thousand seamen and landmen for the service of the year; five hundred thousand pounds to the queen of Hungary; and they provided for the subsidies to Denmark and Hesse Cassel. As the king had determined to make a powerful diversion in the Netherlands, sixteen thousand men were embarked for the continent, under the command of the earl of Stair; and several thousands of Hanoverians, Hessians, and Austrians, were taken into British pay.

The troops which the king of Great Britain had assembled in the Netherlands, marched for the Rhine, and encamped at Hoech on the river Maine. The duke of Cumberland had already come to make his first campaign, and his majesty arrived in the camp on the 9th of June. The king found his army, amounting to about forty thousand men, in a critical situation; and receiving intelligence that a reinforcement of twelve thousand Hanoverians and Hessians had reached Hanau, he resolved to march to that place, as well with a view to effect a junction, as to procure provisions for his forces. Soon after he had begun his march, he perceived the French drawn up in order of battle at the village of Dettingen; and he now found himself enclosed on all sides by the enemy, insomuch
1743] that a retreat was impossible. Thus environed, the confederates must either have fought at a great disadvantage, or been obliged to surrender, if the duke de Grammont had not rashly descended into the plain. The French charged with impetuosity, and the allies received the shock with great intrepidity and deliberation. The king himself displayed much personal courage; and the duke of Cumberland was wounded. The French were at last repulsed, and obliged to cross the Maine, with the loss of five thousand men.

The French, who had now become principals in the war, projected an invasion of Great-Britain, and made preparations for that purpose at Boulogne and Dunkirk, under the inspection of the young Pretender; but sir John Norris appearing with a fleet superior to that which was, to convey the French forces, 1744] the expedition was laid aside for that season. However, in the Netherlands, the enemy had considerable success under marshal count Saxe, a natural son of Augustus, king of Poland, by the countess Koningsmark.

In the next campaign, a very numerous army was assembled under marshal Saxe; and the French 1745] king and the dauphin arriving in the camp, the strong town of Tournay was invested. The duke of Cumberland assumed the command of the allied army; and though the confederates were greatly inferior in number to the enemy, they resolved to attempt the relief of Tournay. On the 28th of April, they came in sight of the French army, strongly encamped under cover of the village of Fontenoy. On the 30th of April they attacked the French in their intrenchments; and though the attempt was considered rash and imprudent, the allied army at first had the advantage; but the destructive fire of the enemy's batteries, to which they were exposed both in front and flank, at last obliged them to retreat. The allies lost about twelve thousand men, and the French nearly the same number; but the consequences of this furious battle were all against the English and the allies. Tournay was compelled to surrender; Ghent was surprised and taken; Ostend, Dendermonde, Oudenarde, Newport, and Aeth, were successively reduced; while the allied army lay entrenched behind the canal of Antwerp.

The pretender, Charles, son of the chevalier de St. George, fired with ambition and the hope of ascending the throne of his ancestors, resolved to risk an invasion of Great Britain. Being furnished with a sum of money, and a supply of arms, he embarked on board of a small frigate, accompanied by the marquis of Tullybardine and a few Scottish and Irish adventurers, and was joined by the Elizabeth, a French ship of war, as his convoy. Their design was to sail round Ire-

land, and to land on the western coast of Scotland; but being met by the *Lion*, an English ship of the line, an engagement ensued between the *Lion* and the *Elizabeth*, in which the latter was so disabled, that she was obliged to return to Brest; and the young Pretender was deprived of a great quantity of arms, and the assistance of about one hundred officers, who had embarked in that vessel for the expedition. Charles, however, in the frigate, continued his course to the western isles of Scotland, and on the 27th of July, landed on the coast of Lochabar, where he was soon joined by twelve hundred men, under their respective chiefs or leaders.

The administration was now sufficiently alarmed. The king was at this time in Hanover. The lords of the regency despatched a messenger to his majesty with the news, and offered a reward of thirty thousand pounds for the apprehension of Charles. Loyal addresses flocked in from all parts. The principal noblemen tendered their services to the government; and the former discontents seemed to be forgotten in the fears of the present moment.

The prince advanced to Perth, where the chevalier, de St. George was proclaimed king of Great Britain; and, the rebel army being considerably augmented, Charles, on the 16th of September, took possession of the town of Edinburgh. Here he caused his father again to be proclaimed, and fixed his residence in the royal palace of Holyrood-house.

Sir John Cope, commander-in-chief of the forces in North Britain, informed of these transactions, assembled all the troops he could muster, and, on the 20th of September, encamped at Preston Pans, in the vicinity of Edinburgh. Next morning he was attacked by the Pretender, with about two thousand four hundred highlanders, who charged sword in hand; and in less than ten minutes, the king's troops were totally routed, with the loss of about five hundred men. By this victory, Charles was supplied with a train of field-artillery, and found himself possessed of all Scotland, except the fortresses.

The Pretender continued to reside in the palace of Holyrood-house; but after being joined by the Kilmarnock, Elcho, Balmerino, and many othe

sons of distinction, and receiving considerable supplies from France, he resolved to make an irruption into England. Accordingly, on the 6th of November, he entered Carlisle, whence he advanced to Penrith, and continued his route through Lancaster and Preston to Manchester, where he was joined by about two hundred English jacobites, under the command of colonel Townley. Crossing the Mersey at Stockport, Charles passed through Macclesfield and Congleton to Derby; at which last place a council was held, and it was determined to return into Scotland. The retreat was effected with all the artillery and military stores, in spite of two hostile armies, one under general Wade, and the other under sir John Ligonier, stationed to intercept the rebels; but the most remarkable circumstance in this expedition was the great moderation and forbearance which the Pretender's army exercised, in a country abounding with plunder. No violence or outrage was committed, notwithstanding the extremities to which they must have been reduced.

The duke of Cumberland, being now invested with the chief command, set out for the north, and overtook the rear of the rebels at the village of Clifton, in the vicinity of Penrith, where a skirmish took place. Carlisle, which the Pretender garrisoned, submitted to the duke in a few days. Charles, however, after levying heavy contributions on Glasgow, which had displayed its attachment to the government, proceeded to invest the castle of Stirling. General Hawley, commander of the king's forces in that quarter, marched to Falkirk, with the intention of bringing the rebels to an action. The latter, however, began
1746] the attack on the 17th of January; and their first volley threw the royal forces into disorder. The rebels following up their blow, the royal army abandoned Falkirk; and retired in confusion to Edinburgh, leaving part of the tents and artillery in the hands of the enemy.

The duke of Cumberland, having put himself at the head of the troops in Edinburgh, advanced to Aberdeen, the rebels fleeing all the way before him; and after crossing the deep and rapid river Spey without opposition, he was at length informed, that the enemy

were encamped on the plains of Culloden, about nine miles from the royal army. On the 16th of April, the duke of Cumberland left Nairn early in the morning, and, after a march of nine miles, perceived the enemy drawn up in order of battle, to the number of four thousand men. The royal army, which was much more numerous, was immediately formed into three lines.

The action commenced about one o'clock in the afternoon. The artillery of the rebels was badly served, and did little execution; but that of the king's troops made a dreadful havoc among the enemy. Impatient of this fire, about five hundred of the clans charged the duke's left wing with their usual impetuosity; and one regiment was thrown into disorder by the attack of this body; but two battalions advancing from the second line, supported the first, and galled the enemy by a close and terrible discharge. At the same time, the dragoons under Hawley, and the Argyleshire militia, pulling down a park wall, which guarded the flank of the rebels, fell upon them, and made a horrible slaughter. In less than half an hour, they were totally routed, and the field covered with the slain.

Thus, in one short hour, all the hopes and ambition of the Pretender sunk together, and instead of thrones and sceptres, he saw himself a miserable outcast. To the eternal disgrace of the conquerors, they spread terror wherever they came; the whole surrounding country was one sad scene of slaughter, desolation and plunder; and, in a few days, there was neither man nor house to be seen within the circuit of fifty miles! The unfortunate Charles was now chased by armed troops from hill to dale, from rock to cavern, and from mountain to mountain. At length, after many escapes and distresses, he found means to embark on board a small vessel, which conveyed him in safety to Morlaix in Bretagne.

Punishment now awaited those who had escaped death in the field of battle. Seventeen rebel officers were executed at Kennington Common, near London. Lords Kilmarnock, Balmerino, and Lovat, suffered decapitation on Tower-hill, as did also Mr. Ratcliffe, the titular earl of Derwentwater, on his former sentence in 1716.

The French had fitted out two squadrons at Brest, one to make a descent on the British colonies in America, the other to assist the operations of their arms in the East Indies. These squadrons, however, were intercepted and attacked by admirals Anson and Warren, and nine ships were taken, on board of which was found a great quantity of bullion, which was landed at Spithead, and conveyed in twenty wagons through the streets of London to the bank. Soon after 1747] ter, admiral Hawke defeated a French fleet, and took seven ships of the line and several frigates; and, in the course of this year, the British cruisers were very successful in capturing the vessels of the enemy.

At the close of the session of parliament, the king 1748] informed both houses, that the preliminaries for a general peace had been actually signed at Aix-la-Chapelle, by the ministers of Great Britain, France, and the United Provinces, on the basis of a general restitution of conquests.

By the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle, in which the earl of Sandwich and sir Thomas Robinson were the British plenipotentiaries, it was stipulated, that the dutchies of Parma, Placentia, and Guastalla, should be ceded to Don Philip, heir-apparent to the Spanish throne, and his heirs; but, in case of his succeeding to the crown of Spain, that then these dominions should revert to the house of Austria: that the fortifications of Dunkirk to the sea should be demolished: that the king of Prussia should be secured in his possession of Silesia, which he had conquered: and that the queen of Hungary should be guaranteed in her hereditary dominions. No mention was made of the right of the English to sail in the American seas without being subject to a search, though this claim was the original cause of the difference between Great-Britain and Spain. In short, it would be difficult to point out one advantage which this country gained by a war that had cost so many millions of money.

As several nations on the continent had reformed their calendar according to the computation of Pope Gregory the Thirteenth, and much confusion in mercantile transactions had arisen, the parliament decreed, that the new year should begin on the first day of Jan

1752] uary, and that eleven intermediate nominal days, between the second and fourteenth of September, should this year be omitted, so that the day succeeding the second should be denominated and accounted the fourteenth.

As soon as the French had recovered a little from the effects of the late war, they began to erect forts on the back of the British settlements in North-America, and they also attempted to seize Nova-Scotia. The English government receiving only evasive answers from the court of France, on the subject of the encroachments in America, ordered the governors of that country to expel the French by force from their settlements on the river Ohio. In consequence, colonel Washington, who afterwards made himself so famous in the cause of American independence, was despatched from Virginia with four hundred men, and occupying a post on the banks of the Ohio, was attacked by the French who compelled him to surrender the fort. It was now evident, that war was inevitable. France continued to send reinforcements of men, and supplies of ammunition, to Quebec, for the purpose of prosecuting her ambitious projects; and the ministry of Great Britain exhorted the governors of the provinces in North-America to repel the incursions of the enemy.

Admiral Boscawen being sent with a squadron of ships to protect the province of Nova-Scotia, captured two French vessels, the Alcide and the Lys. About the same time, general Braddock, who had been sent to Virginia, took upon him the command of the 1755] forces destined to act against the French on the Ohio; and, on the 9th of July, while advancing without proper caution, he was suddenly attacked by a general fire, both in front and flank, from an invisible enemy, concealed behind the trees and bushes. The van-guard immediately fell back, and horror and confusion seized the ranks. The general himself was killed by a musket-shot; and the few remaining soldiers instantly fled, and left their baggage and ammunition in the hands of the enemy.

Sir William Johnson, who had been appointed to the command of an expedition against Crown Point, being attacked by the French and Indians near Q

HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

go, on the south-east side of the lake Ontario, defeated the enemy with great loss, but was unable to proceed on the ulterior object of his orders.

In this year happened a terrible catastrophe, which united all parties in one common sentiment of humanity. On the 1st of November, an earthquake destroyed the greatest part of the city of Lisbon, with an immense number of its inhabitants, while the survivors, destitute of the necessaries of life, were exposed to misery and famine. On this occasion, the parliament of Great Britain generously voted one hundred thousand pounds for the distressed Portuguese.

The next year, a treaty between his Britannic majesty and the king of Prussia was signed, by which they mutually engaged not to suffer any foreign troops 1756] to enter Germany. On the other hand, the queen of Hungary, though she owed every thing to Great Britain, concluded a treaty of mutual guarantee and support with France; and she refused to his Britannic majesty the auxiliaries that she had agreed to furnish, on account of her dangerous neighbour the king of Prussia.

Mr. Pitt, and Mr. Legge, the most popular members of administration, disapproving of the political measures which had been adopted, as ruinous and absurd, were dismissed from office; and the seals were soon after transferred from sir Thomas Robinson to Mr. Fox, whose abilities were universally acknowledged.

The French equipped a formidable squadron of ships at Brest, and assembling a number of land-forces and transports, threatened England with an invasion. To meet the attack, several thousands of foreign mercenaries were called upon to assist this country, on the presumption that the menaces of France would be carried into effect; but, under the pretence of an invading armament, the French prepared an expedition, which too well succeeded.

A formidable fleet sailed from Toulon with forces to invade Minorca; and when admiral Byng, who had been sent out too late, arrived at Gibraltar, he found that the enemy had landed, and were besieging Fort St. Philip, which was defended by general Blakeney. The admiral being reinforced by a detachment from

the garrison at Gibraltar, proceeded to Minorca, and perceived the British colours still flying at the castle of St. Philip. However, before a landing could be effected, the French fleet, under La Galissoniere, appeared; but though an engagement ensued, both commanders seemed averse to the continuance of the battle; and the French admiral, taking advantage of Byng's hesitation, sailed away.

In a council of war, which was held immediately after this indecisive engagement, it was unanimously agreed, that it was impracticable to relieve the castle of St. Philip, and that it would be advisable to return to Gibraltar, which might require immediate protection. General Blakeney receiving no assistance, at length capitulated on honourable terms.

The ministry, irritated against admiral Byng, who had complained that the English fleet had been too long delayed, and that the ships under his command were unfit for service, took no steps to lessen the odium which popular prejudice attached to him; on the contrary, they were pleased to find the blame transferred from themselves, and that the admiral's imputed misconduct exonerated them from censure.

The unfortunate admiral was brought to trial, and 1757] the court determined, that during the engagement off Minorca, he did not use his utmost endeavours to take, seize, and destroy, the ships of the French king, nor exert his utmost power for the relief of the castle of St. Philip; and, that the punishment attached to this sentence was death; but, as they believed that his misconduct arose neither from cowardice nor disaffection, they earnestly recommended him to mercy.

All the friends and relations of the unhappy man exerted their influence to obtain a remission of his sentence, which popular clamour alone had extorted from his judges; but the sovereign was told, that the death of Byng was necessary to appease the fury of the people; and, in spite of every application, a warrant was signed for his execution. Thus abandoned to his fate, the unfortunate admiral was not wanting to himself on this trying occasion. Conscious of the uprightness of his intentions, he advanced, to the quarter-deck with a firm and deliberate step, and throwing

down his hat, kneeled on a cushion, tied one handkerchief over his eyes, and dropped another as a signal to his executioners, when five balls passed through his body, and he fell dead without a struggle.

Notwithstanding this sacrifice, the clamours against the administration continued to increase; and the ministry found it necessary to admit into a participation of office Mr. Pitt and Mr. Legge, who were alike distinguished for their spirit and integrity; but adverse as these two patriots were to his majesty's scheme of continental politics, they could not agree with their colleagues, and were dismissed from their situations. Addresses, however, poured in from all parts, in favour of the discarded ministers; and the king thought proper to reinstate Mr. Pitt in his former situation of secretary of state, and Mr. Legge in the office of chancellor of the exchequer.

Public affairs were adverse at the commencement of this administration. An unsuccessful attempt was made against Rochefort; but what was infinitely more disastrous, the duke of Cumberland, unable to contend with the great military talents of Marshal d'Etrees, was obliged to capitulate at Closter Seven, by which Hanover was left in the hands of the French, and an army of thirty-eight thousand Hanoverians were disarmed and disbanded. This inglorious convention seems to have been the crisis of the war, which, under the guidance of other ministers, produced the most splendid events.

In America, after the return of lord Loudon to England, the chief command devolved on major-general Abercrombie. On the 27th of July, Louisburg and Cape Breton surrendered to the British under major-general Amherst; and Fort du Quesne, which the French had evacuated, was garrisoned under the name of Pittsburgh, in compliment to the minister. The English also concluded a treaty with the Indian nations, inhabiting the country between the Apalachian mountains and the lakes; and such was the spirit of enterprise, which now animated the cabinet, that the conquest of Canada was projected as the business of a single campaign.

To accomplish this important object, major-general Olse, who had already distinguished himself by his

military talents, was directed to undertake the siege of Quebec, while general Amherst, after reducing Ticonderoga and Crown Point, was to cross the lake Champlain, and join Wolfe under the walls of the capital of Canada.

The British forces under general Wolfe arrived in the river of St. Lawrence, and encamped near the falls of the Montmorenci. M. de Montcalm, the French commander, though his troops were superior in number to the invaders, had taken every precaution of defence, which the nature of the country afforded. The city of Quebec was tolerably fortified; and Montcalm, having reinforced the troops of the colony, with this army occupied an advantageous situation from the river St. Charles to the falls of the Montmorenci.

On the last day of July, the British general made dispositions for an assault, under cover of the fire from the ships in the river; but the English grenadiers, impetuously attacking the enemy's entrenchments in disorder, were repulsed with great loss, and Wolfe was obliged to retreat.

This mortifying check preyed on the spirits of the gallant Wolfe, who could not brook the most distant prospect of censure or disgrace, and who declared that he would rather die than fail of ultimate success. At length, a new plan of operations was concerted for landing the troops in the night within a league of Cape Diamond, in hopes of ascending the heights of Abraham, which rise abruptly with a steep ascent from the banks of the river, that they might gain possession of the grounds on the back of the city, where it was but slightly fortified.

This plan was put in execution; and the troops were disembarked during the night, with secrecy and silence; but the precipice still remained to be ascended. With infinite labour and difficulty, the troops reached the summit of the heights of Abraham, and the general drew them up in order of battle as they arrived. When M. de Montcalm understood that the English had gained these heights, he found himself under the necessity of risking an engagement, in order to save the town, and accordingly advanced his men with great intrepidity. A furious contest ensued between general Wolfe, who stood in the front of the li

ly received a shot in the wrist, to which he paid little regard; but, advancing at the head of the grenadiers, another ball pierced his breast, and compelled him to quit the scene of action. As he reclined on the arm of an officer, he was roused by the exclamation, "They run! They run!"—"Who run?" said the brave Wolfe, with great eagerness. "The French," replied the officer. "Then," said he, "I die contented;" and almost immediately expired in the arms of victory.

The French general, M. de Montcalm, was also mortally wounded in the battle, and died soon after; but the advantage remained wholly on the side of the English. Quebec was obliged to surrender, and at length the conquest of all Canada was completed, by the capture of Montreal under general Amherst.

Success indeed attended the British arms in every quarter of the globe. Fort Louis and the isle of Goree, in Africa, submitted to the British; as did also Gaudaloupe, in the West-Indies. Cherbourg was taken by commodore Howe, and Havre de Grace bombarded by admiral Rodney.

In the Mediterranean, M. de la Clue was defeated by admiral Boscawen, who took four of his ships; and another fleet under M. de Conflans was attacked off Quiberon-bay by sir Edward Hawke, when a furious battle ensued, and night alone saved the French from total destruction. In this last engagement, two [1759] of the enemy's best ships were sunk, one struck her colours, two were stranded and destroyed, and the *Soleil Royal*, the flag-ship of the French admiral, was burnt by her own crew, to prevent her from falling into the hands of the English.

In Germany the war was carried on with great vigour, and the glory of the British arms raised to the highest pitch; and though the empress of Russia had acceded to the alliance concluded between the courts of Versailles and Vienna, the king of Prussia, aided by his Britannic majesty, continued to make head against the numerous armies of those powers.

Such was the general posture of affairs, when George [1760] II. died, on the 25th day of October, in the 77th year of his age, and the 34th of his reign. He was at his palace of Kensington; and having risen at

his usual hour, he observed to his attendants, that as the weather was fine, he would walk out. In a few minutes after, being left alone, he was heard to fall; and, being lifted on the bed, he desired, in a faint voice, that the princess Amelia might be called; but before she could arrive, he expired.

George the Second was in his person rather below the middle size. In his disposition he is said to have been prone to anger, yet soon appeased; in other respects, he was mild and humane. He was personally brave, and fond of war as a soldier. Though his foreign politics cannot be commended, his internal government deserves unqualified praise.

In this reign, the hopes of the Stuart party and family being baffled, and the legitimacy of the Guelphs generally recognised, the constitutional government, as adjusted at the Revolution, began to display its excellencies and faults, and to acquire its full force.

Parliaments were regularly convened, for the despatch of all business connected with the improvement of the laws, and the regulation of the revenue; and the prerogatives of the sovereign, and the rights of the legislature, were duly recognised and balanced.

The king chose his ministers, and these were amenable to parliament; while the latter was kept in good humour by the influence and patronage of the ministers. The office of prime-minister began now to distinguish our councils. The first who merited the name was sir Robert Walpole, a favourite confidential minister of George the first and Second; and the nation, under him and his successors, presented the spectacle of a sovereign contented with the splendour of his crown, and with the manifestation of his power, under the advice and responsibility of his ministers; of a parliament whose majorities were governed by the influence of the minister, and the moderation and plausibility of his measures; and of a people obedient to the laws, the operation of which they had the power of controlling by juries formed from their own body.

Such a state of society continued through an entire generation, begat confidence at home and respect abroad. The public securities rose in value, commerce increased, domestic improvements were made,

and the capabilities of the nation in arts, arms, and industry, began to develop themselves, and prepare the way for the more decisive events of the succeeding reign.

CONTINUATION,

FROM

THE ACCESSION OF GEORGE III.

TO THE

CORONATION OF GEORGE IV.

CHAPTER X.

The Reign of George III.

ON the decease of George II., the eldest son of Frederick, prince of Wales, succeeded his grandfather, under the most favourable auspices; as the third of his name and family.

This young and native sovereign, whose character and affability of deportment rendered him the object of esteem, was greeted by the enthusiasm of the people. "Born and educated in this country," said his majesty, in his first speech to parliament, "I glory in the name of Briton."

The parliament, with the general approbation, voted the clear yearly sum of 800,000*l.* for the maintenance of his majesty's household and the support of the royal dignity, in lieu of the civil-list revenues, which had been formerly appropriated for the sovereigns of this country. This was followed by a wise and liberal regulation, by which the judges were rendered independent of the crown, and which, as it passed on the recommendation of the king, justly gained his majesty universal applause.

The war, however, was prosecuted with unabated vigour. The island of Belleisle surrendered to commodore Keppel and general Hodgeon. In the East Indies, the French were divested of all their possessions of importance; and Pondicherry, their capital settlement, was reduced by colonel Coote and admiral Stevens. In the West Indies, Martinico, and some other islands, were added to the list of British conquests.

During these transactions, Mr. Pitt, with that sagacity and intuitive foresight which characterize an able statesman, anticipating the hostile designs of Spain, proposed an immediate declaration of war against that kingdom; but this measure being opposed by his colleagues in office, and finding that the earl of Bute, who had been governor to his majesty, had acquired an ascendancy in the royal favour, he disdained to act a subordinate part, resigned the seals, and retired with a pension and a peerage for his lady.

Lord Bute, who had been previously appointed one of the principal secretaries of state, was now supposed to influence the decisions of government; but, before the end of the year, the ministry found it necessary to adopt the measure recommended by Mr. Pitt, and to declare war against Spain. Havannah, Manilla, and all the Philippine islands, became, in consequence, the reward of British valour.

Amidst these successes, however, the restoration of peace was equally desired by the victors and the vanquished; and after some time had been spent in negotiation, a definitive treaty was signed at 1763] Paris on the 10th of February, and peace solemnly proclaimed in London, on the 22d of the following month. By this treaty, Great-Britain obtained the extensive province of Canada, East Florida, West Florida, the Grenadas in the West Indies, and some inferior acquisitions; but restored all the other conquests made during the war. These terms were considered in England as degrading to the nation; and clamours were raised against the administration of lord Bute, who had never been a favourite with the people.

About this time, too, the daring spirit of John Wilkes, Esq., who sat in parliament for Aylesbury, contributed to hasten the downfall of the premier. This man published a paper called "The North Briton," in which he attacked the minister with great asperity, and indulged in the grossest scurrility against the whole Scottish nation. Churchill, the poet, employed his satirical powers in the same cause; and the ferment excited by those two able, but profligate characters, was so great, that the earl of Bute thought proper to resign his office of first lord of the treasury,

in which he was succeeded by Mr. George Grenville.

One of the first acts of the new minister was the prosecution of Mr. Wilkes, who, in the North Briton, No. 45, had asserted, that his majesty's speech, which he affected to consider as the minister's, contained a falsehood. In consequence of this violation of all decorum, Mr. Wilkes was apprehended by virtue of a general warrant, his papers were seized, and he was committed to the Tower. In the court of common pleas, however, Mr. Wilkes was acquitted of the charge exhibited against him; and, lord chief justice Pratt declared, that general warrants were illegal.

Mr. Grenville possessed integrity and abilities, but he wanted a sound discriminating judgment. In order to raise a revenue from the American colonies, he projected a stamp-act, which, being resisted by the Americans, was afterwards repealed; but the attempt and its failure laid the foundation for that fatal contest, which at length terminated in the independence of the American colonies.

The name of the princess of Wales having been
1765] omitted in the bill for appointing a regency, in consequence of his majesty's illness, the king, after recovering from his indisposition, determined to change his ministers; and the marquis of Rockingham was placed at the head of a new administration. The highly respectable character of the marquis, however, could not secure the new ministers a continuance in office. Possessing a great share of moderation in principles, their opponents effectually made head against them; and the duke of Grafton became first lord of the treasury; while Mr. Pitt, who was now raised to the dignity of earl of Chatham, accepted the office of privy-seal.

Mr. Charles Townshend, the chancellor of the ex-
1766] chequer, who possessed eminent talents for business, but too much versatility of disposition, unhappily revived the design of taxing America, though taxation and representation cannot constitutionally be separated; and, while the earl of Chatham was confined by extreme illness, he brought in a bill for imposing a duty on tea, and some other articles imported into the colonies. Against this design, the Americans formed

a general combination for not receiving any of the commodities thus taxed, from the mother country; and, the acts were again repealed, except as far as related to the duties on tea. This concession, however, gave little satisfaction to the Americans, who considered the late acts as unconstitutional, and proposed a general union of the colonies for defending their natural rights.

Meanwhile Mr. Townshend died, and his place of chancellor of the exchequer was filled by lord North. Some other changes also took place; and the earl of Chatham, who had long been treated with disregard, either on account of his infirmities, or his uncomplying disposition, resigned his office of privy-seal, and from this time lived unconnected with the affairs of government, though he frequently took an active part in the interesting debates which agitated this period.

The discontents which had been produced in America by the insidious, not to say unjust designs of the ministry, were about to break out into a flame, that spread into a general conflagration. Laws having been passed for quartering troops in the colonies, and for rendering the governors of the different provinces solely dependant on the crown, the Americans, in order to show their aversion to the measures of the British government, and their determination to resist, destroyed a large quantity of tea at Boston, and obliged ships laden with the same commodity to return from other places without landing their cargoes. In consequence of these proceedings, acts were passed for shutting up the port of Boston, and for altering the constitution of Massachusetts's Bay and Quebec.

This violent stretch of power excited the utmost indignation in America; and the colonies entered into a *solemn league and covenant* to suspend all commercial intercourse with Great Britain, till the obnoxious acts were repealed. Meanwhile, measures were adopted for holding a general congress of the American colonies; and a bold and spirited remonstrance, soliciting a redress of grievances, was addressed to the king. All remonstrances and petitions, however, being equally disregarded, and every avenue to accommodation, except by implicit submission, shut up, the Americans determined to have recourse to arms, as

the only means left for defending their unalienable rights.

On the 19th of April, general Gage, commander-in-chief, having been informed that the Americans
1775] had collected military stores at Concord, sent a detachment to seize them. The detachment was attacked at Lexington, and many were killed on both sides; but the loss on the side of the British far exceeded that of their opponents.

The torch of civil war being thus lighted up, the colonists flew to arms as if by concert, and assumed the title of "the United States of America," whose affairs were to be managed by a congress. This body of representatives instantly passed resolutions for raising an army, for issuing a paper currency for its payment, and for prohibiting all importations to those places which still remained faithful in their allegiance to the crown of Great-Britain.

A few weeks after this engagement, the British army in America was strengthened by a large reinforcement, which arrived from England, under the command of generals Howe, Burgoyne, and Clinton. Martial-law was now proclaimed; but the congress was not easily intimidated; and, voting that the compact between the crown and the inhabitants of Massachusetts's Bay was dissolved, they recommended that province to resume its chartered rights.

As further hostilities were now mutually expected, the Americans, that they might secure Charlestown, sent a detachment of men at night to erect some considerable works on Bunker's Hill. When these operations were discovered in the morning, a heavy fire commenced from the ships; and the Americans were with difficulty driven from their intrenchments by generals Howe and Pigot. In this action, which was very severe, the loss of the British in killed and wounded amounted nearly to half their number, and
1775] included many officers. After this affair, the colonists threw up works on another hill opposite; and the British troops were closely invested in the peninsula.

The general congress published a very animated declaration, in which their reasons for taking up arms were assigned, and the objects for which they con-

tended were distinctly pointed out. They also appointed George Washington general and commander in chief of the American forces. This gentleman had acquired some experience in the last war, when he commanded different bodies of provincials; and his conduct and military skill fully justified the partiality of his countrymen. Another petition to the king was also voted by congress, in which they earnestly beseeched his majesty to adopt some method of putting a stop to the unhappy contest between Great-Britain and the colonies; but this petition, though presented by Mr. Penn, late governor, and one of the proprietors of Pennsylvania, did not obtain an answer.

In the mean time, the Americans, prepared for every event, and animated with the enthusiasm of a people contending for liberty, no longer confined themselves to defensive operations. Ticonderoga and Crown Point had already been taken by a party of Americans; and it was determined to fit out an expedition against Canada, under generals Montgomery and Arnold; but in an attempt against Quebec, Montgomery fell, and Arnold, after being dangerously wounded, was compelled to make a precipitate retreat.

The state of the royal army at Boston had now become deplorable. By a masterly stroke, Washington compelled the British to abandon the town; and all the English troops, with such loyalists as chose
1776] to accompany them, were precipitately embarked and conveyed to Halifax. Next day, general Washington entered Boston in triumph.

Soon after, congress, in a solemn declaration, withdrew all allegiance from the king of Great Britain, and assumed for the colonies the style and character of "Free and independent States." They also published articles of confederation and perpetual union between the provinces; while in proportion as the prospect of bringing them to submission was lessened, the arrogance and infatuation of the British ministry, at the head of whom was lord North, seemed to increase.

An unsuccessful attempt was made upon Charlestown, in which the English suffered severely; but about the same time, general Howe obtained possession of New-York; and general Clinton and sir Peter

Parker took Rhode-Island. General Howe, and his brother, admiral lord Howe, were regarded with partiality by the Americans; and some overtures of reconciliation were made by the two brothers; but the manifesto which they published, offered only pardon to the colonists, and produced no beneficial purpose.

The ill success of the Americans, however, was productive of those internal effects which operate as strongly as external force; and at this period, if terms of concession had been offered by Great Britain, the constitutional supremacy of the mother country might probably have been acknowledged; but the time of conciliation was neglected, and the infatuation of ministers prevailed.

In the next campaign, the Americans were defeated by general Howe in the battle of Brandywine; and the English entered Philadelphia in triumph. On the 1777] other hand, general Burgoyne, who had set out from Quebec with an army of ten thousand men, in order to form a line of communication between New-york and Canada, after driving the Americans before him for some time, was at last surrounded at Saratoga by general Gates, and obliged to lay down his arms.

The success of the Americans now determined the 1778] court of France to declare in favour of the new republic; and so gloomy was the prospect of Great Britain, that ministers sent commissioners to America to treat of peace; but this attempt at conciliation was of no essential service.

Hostilities commenced with France, by a naval engagement between admirable Kepple and count d'Orvilliers; and victory would have been decisive in favour of the British, if sir Hugh Palliser had obeyed the signals of the admiral. Both officers were tried before a court-martial. Palliser, though found guilty, was only slightly censured; while admiral Kepple was honourably acquitted.

Meanwhile, Pondicherry in the East, and the island of St. Lucia in the West-Indies, were captured by the English; but Dominica, St. Vincent, and Grenada, were taken by the French, who assisted the Americans with a fleet, commanded by the count d'Estaing. In attempting the relief of Grenada, an indecisive

1779] engagement took place between admiral Byron with a fleet of twenty-one ships, and the count d'Estaing, who had twenty-five or twenty-six ships of the line, besides twelve frigates, under his command. After this action, the French admiral, in conjunction with the Americans, attempted the reduction of Savannah, but was frustrated by general Prevost. In Europe, the French made a descent with a considerable force on Jersey, but were repulsed by the promptitude of major Pearson, the English commandant, who fell in the moment of victory, at the head of his small corps.

Before the close of this session, his majesty announced to parliament that Spain had joined the alliance against England; and this new enemy joining the French with thirty ships of the line, the combined fleets of those two neighbouring powers for some time rode triumphant in the British channel, and menaced the English coast with impunity. Spain also took New-Orleans on the Mississippi, and closely invested Gibraltar.

Admiral sir George Rodney, being appointed to the chief naval command in the West-Indies, ob-
1780] tained a complete victory over a Spanish fleet of eleven sail off Cape St. Vincent; and after relieving Gibraltar, he proceeded to execute his ulterior orders, and had three indecisive engagements with the French fleet in the West-Indies.

In June, the same year, happened one of the most dreadful riots in London which history records. It arose from the fanaticism of an association of protestant sectaries, who fancied that religion was in danger, on account of some just and equitable indulgences which the legislature had recently granted to the Roman catholics. A mob, collected by a procession of this association, pulled down or burnt several popish chapels, broke open many of the prisons, and liberated both felons and debtors. In a few days, however, the riots were quelled, and lord George Gordon, the president of the association, was committed to the Tower.

From the agitations of war and faction, we turn with pleasure to the progress made by science and the arts, under the munificent patronage of George the Third. Byron, who was commissioned in 1764 to ex-

plore the Atlantic and Pacific oceans, and circumnavigate the globe, corrected by his observations the errors of former charts, and discovered several islands in the South Pacific. A few years after, captain Wallis sailed on a similar expedition, and, on the 19th of June, 1767, perpetuated his name by the discovery of Otaheite, (or King George's Island,) in the South Pacific, and of other islands in the same ocean. Carteret also traversed the Pacific, and circumnavigated the globe. Each of these navigators contributed an accession of geographical knowledge.

To Captain James Cook, however, more than to any other individual since the time of Columbus, we are indebted for extending the boundaries of geographical science. In his first voyage to the Pacific ocean, in 1770, he discovered the Society Islands, determined the insularity of New Zealand, and explored the eastern coast of New-Holland. In his second voyage, in 1773, he discovered New Caledonia, the island of Georgia, and an unknown coast, which he named Sandwich Land. In 1776, another voyage of discovery being proposed by the government, the Resolution and Discovery were fitted out for that purpose, and captains Cook and Clerke were appointed to this expedition. This last voyage was particularly distinguished by the extent and importance of its discoveries. Besides several small islands in the South Pacific, Cook discovered the group of islands called the Sandwich Islands, explored the western coast of America from the latitude of forty-three to seventy degrees north, and ascertained the proximity of the two great continents of Asia and America. In September, 1780, the Resolution and Discovery returned to England from this voyage round the world, but to the grief of every person who respected worth and talents, without captain Cook, who had been unfortunately killed by the natives of Owyhee, one of the Sandwich Islands which he had discovered.

This year was also memorable for the armed neutrality entered into by the northern powers, for the purpose of resisting the English in exercising the right of searching neutral vessels, on the principle that "free bottoms make free goods." It being discovered that the States-General had concluded a trea-

ty with the American government, England declared war against Holland.

The Dutch island of St. Eustatius, and the settlements of Demarara, Berbice, and Issequibo, submitted to the British; and a severe engagement took place between admiral sir Hyde Parker and the fleet of Holland off the Dogger Bank, but without any decisive issue on either side.

In America, alternate successes and reverses attended the arms of Britain; but even victory was fatal to England, while defeats were doubly injurious, and rendered the colonists certain of a prosperous issue. Indeed, the cause of Britain in this contest with her American colonies daily declined, and became more desperate. Earl Cornwallis, who had distinguished himself on various occasions, was at length [1781] surrounded by general Washington, assisted by the marquis de la Fayette, and obliged to surrender the whole of his forces, amounting to seven thousand men, to the combined French and American army, at York Town, in Virginia; an event which terminated the hopes of the British government in America, and ended the war.

About the same time, St. Eustatius was recovered from the English; and the Spaniards made themselves masters of West Florida. The siege of Gibraltar was also carried on with vigour; but the place was very ably defended by the heroic governor, general Elliot.

In the East-Indies, Hyder Ally, the confederate of France, took Arcot by assault, and out to pieces, or made prisoners of a detachment under colonel Bailie. Sir Eyre Coote, however, defeated Hyder in two subsequent engagements, relieved Vellore, and retrieved the fortune of the war in the Carnatic.

After the surrender of earl Cornwallis to general Washington, the influence of the British ministry was at an end; and a change of measures appearing absolutely necessary, a complete revolution in the [1782] cabinet took place on the 27th of March, under the auspices of the marquis of Rockingham, who was appointed first lord of the treasury. The earl of Shelburne and Mr. Fox were appointed secretaries of state.

Peace was now ardently desired by all ranks of peo-

ple in this country; and the new ministry consented that the independence of America should be allowed, and entered into measures for effectuating a general treaty of pacification. For this purpose, Mr. Grenville was sent to Paris, with full powers to treat with all the belligerent nations, and orders were despatched to the commanders in chief in America, to acquaint them with the pacific views of the British cabinet, and with the offer of independence to the United States.

After the capture of lord Cornwallis and his army, the English suffered a series of losses in America. The French took Nevis, St. Christopher's, and Montserrat; the Bahama islands surrendered to the Spaniards; and Jamaica was threatened by the fleets of Spain and France, on board of which was an army of twenty thousand men. This formidable armament, however, was prevented from uniting by the promptitude and bravery of admiral Rodney, who engaged and totally defeated the French under count de Grasse, before it could form a junction with the Spanish fleet. The French admiral, in the *Ville de Paris* of 120 guns, was taken, with two seventy-four gun ships, and one of sixty-four guns. Two other ships of the line were lost in the action; and a few days after, sir Samuel Hood captured two more French ships of the line and two frigates. This decisive and glorious victory, which was achieved on the 12th of April, put a stop to the intended project against Jamaica; and admiral Rodney, in reward for his services, was gratified with a peerage and a pension.

The valour of the British arms was most remarkably displayed at Gibraltar, where the English, under that brave veteran general Elliot, acquired immortal honour, and converted one of the most formidable attacks that had ever been made in the history of sieges, to the destruction of the assailants, and the frustration of all the hopes of the enemy. The enthusiasm and gallantry of Elliot and his garrison were emulated by lord Howe and the fleet. To the admiration of all Europe, that brave admiral, with thirty-four sail of the line, passed the straits in the face of a superior enemy, and threw succours in the fortress.

Sept.
13,
1782.

This was the last transaction of importance during the continuance of the war in Europe; and thus the military career of Britain, after her repeated misfortunes, terminated with great splendour. All the belligerent powers were now inclined to listen to overtures of pacification. The happy prospect, however, of peace and prosperity was obscured for a time by the death of the marquis of Rockingham, from whose administration the nation had formed great expectations. He was succeeded by the earl of Shelburne, and Mr. Fox resigned his office of secretary of the northern department.

The new ministers, however, continued the negotiation for peace; and as the independence of America was virtually recognised, the war with the colonies had in fact terminated. At length, on the 30th of November, 1782, provisional articles between England and America, were signed at Paris. By this treaty, the sovereignty and independence of the United States were fully acknowledged. So great, indeed, were the concessions of ministers on this occasion, that they neglected the interest of the loyalists in America, whose estates had been confiscated, and who were thus thrown on the generosity of the British.

In our treaties with the French, the Dutch, and the Spaniards, the same improvident facility was
1783] apparent; and these treaties, when submitted to parliament, extorted the severest animadversions. By this calamitous war, Great Britain lost the best part of her transatlantic colonies, and, besides many thousands of valuable lives, expended or squandered nearly 150 millions of money. The address of thanks for the peace was carried in the house of lords by a majority of 72 to 59, but lost in the house of commons by a majority of 224 to 208.

It was now discovered that Mr. Fox, in his animosity to the earl of Shelburne, had formed a coalition with his former political antagonist, lord North. This unnatural and unprincipled coalition, which excited general indignation, was defended by Mr. Fox on the strange plea, that the question of American independence being now at rest, he had no desire to perpetuate his enmity to a statesman whom he had

found honourable as an adversary, and of whose openness and sincerity as a friend he had no doubt.

Their united opposition prevailed, and a change took place in the ministry. The duke of Portland was placed at the head of the treasury, lord John Cavendish was made chancellor of the exchequer, and lord North and Mr. Fox were appointed joint secretaries of state. The coalition administration became the theme of universal and passionate execration; and when public confidence is once lost, it can never be completely regained.

Mr. Pitt, the son of the immortal earl of Chatham, and who afterwards rivalled his father's glory, made a motion for a parliamentary reform, and proposed to add one hundred members to the counties, and abolish a proportionable number of the obnoxious boroughs. This plan, though certainly the most judicious that has yet been proposed for the independence of parliamentary representation, was negatived by a large majority.

Soon after the meeting of parliament in November, Mr. Fox introduced a bill for regulating the affairs of the East-India Company. This famous bill proposed to deprive the directors and proprietors of the entire administration, not only of their territorial, but also of their commercial affairs, and to vest the management and direction of them in seven commissioners named in the bill, and irremovable by the crown, except in consequence of an address of either house of parliament. It passed through the lower house by a great majority, but was lost in the upper, after very animated debates, in which its unconstitutional principles were fully exposed.

The king, being informed of the nature and tendency of this bill, considered himself duped and deceived; and the coalition ministry, which had been deservedly unpopular, were suddenly dismissed. Mr. Pitt, then a very young man, was declared first lord of the treasury and chancellor of the exchequer; the marquis of Caermarthen, and Mr. Thomas Townsend, created lord Sydney, were nominated secretaries of state; and lord Thurlow was appointed to the office of lord-chancellor. The intelligence of this change was received by the nation with transports of joy.

The discarded ministers, however, still maintained their influence in the house of commons; and the singular spectacle was exhibited of a minister retaining his situation in defiance of the votes of the commons, and of an opposition restraining the power of the executive, by prohibiting the issuing of payments from the bank or the exchequer, for the public service. At length, after strong and repeated contests between the two factions, during which the minister found himself frequently in a minority, the parliament was dissolved by proclamation, and a new one convened. So complete was the rout of the coalition party, that of one hundred and sixty members who lost their seats at the general election, nearly the whole were the friends either of Mr. Fox or lord North.

March
25.
1784.

The arrangements of a plan for the future government of India, was the most important business to which the attention of the new parliament was first directed. The bill which Mr. Pitt introduced for that purpose, was carried through the house of commons by a great majority; and in the upper house, though strongly opposed, it passed with a few dissenting votes.

In the next session, Mr. Pitt brought forward his
1785] plan for a reform in the representation, varying in some measure from his former project, but in every respect temperate and judicious. The result of this plan was to give one hundred members to the popular interest, and to extend the elective franchise to more than one hundred thousand persons, who, by the existing laws, were excluded from voting for members of parliament. After a debate of considerable length, in which Mr. Fox bestowed on the plan a just and liberal tribute of praise, the bill was rejected by a majority of 274 to 174. Mr. Pitt was equally unsuccessful in attempting to settle the commerce of England and Ireland on a mutual and equitable footing. His propositions, which were amended in the house of lords, passed in England with difficulty; but, in the Irish parliament, they were rejected with marked disapprobation.

Among the various measures agitated by parliament
ng the next session, was a plan for extinguishing

the national debt. This celebrated plan was founded
 1786] on a report framed by a select committee, who
 had been appointed to examine the annual income and expenditure of the state. By this report it appeared, that the public income for the year 1785 exceeded the annual expenditure by £900,000. This surplus the minister proposed to increase to one million, and to appropriate the annual sum of one million to the liquidation of the national debt. This annual million Mr. Pitt proposed to be vested in the hands of certain commissioners, to be by them applied regularly in the purchase of stock. In the progress of the bill, Mr. Fox suggested an amendment, which was gratefully received by the minister—that whenever a new loan should in future be made, the commissioners should be empowered to accept of the loan, or such proportion of it as should be equal to the cash then in their hands; and that the interest and douceur annexed to it should be applied to the purposes of the sinking fund. The bill finally passed, with great and deserved approbation; and this measure has been in general pursued under almost every change of circumstances, and amidst unexampled difficulties.

During the following year, the republican party in Holland having obtained an accession of strength, and being secretly favoured by the court of France, re-
 1787] nounced the authority of the Stadtholder, under the pretext that he sacrificed the interests of his country to predilection for the English. The active interference, however, of the king of Prussia, in defence of the prince of Orange, to whom he was nearly related by marriage, restored the authority of the Stadtholder, while the dignified tone and vigorous preparations of the British minister intimidated the French from assisting the republicans.

This year is also remarkable for the impeachment of Warren Hastings, Esq., late governor-general of Bengal. The trial of this gentleman continued for seven years, and, terminated in his honourable acquittal. The disgraceful procrastination of his trial, and the acrimony with which it was conducted, led many to compassionate a man, who, held up as a great public delinquent, seemed destined to lead a life of impeachment, and to have become the object of a re-

less persecution. If there were errors in the conduct of Warren Hastings, they were more than compensated by his exertions and moral intentions; and it may safely be affirmed, that in the administration of India, he in general deserved praise rather than censure, and that his character will be always venerated in this country. which was essentially benefited by his services.

The next session was memorable for the first discussion in parliament on the subject of the in-
1788] human traffic in slaves. Mr. Wilberforce, who had announced his intention of moving for the abolition of that abominable trade, was unavoidably absent from indisposition; but, at the suggestion of sir William Dolben, some regulations were enacted for restraining the cruelties practised on board the slave-ships.

The same year being the centenary of the glorious revolution of 1688, the 5th of November, the day of king William's landing, was celebrated by rejoicings in various parts of the kingdom.

Soon after the recess of parliament, the king, who had been rather indisposed, was advised to try the mineral waters of Cheltenham, where he appeared to recover his health; but on his return to London, late in the summer, his illness returned with new and alarming symptoms; and it could no longer be concealed, that the malady with which he was afflicted was a mental derangement, that rendered him wholly incapable of public business.

It now became necessary to appoint a regent to exercise the royal functions till the health of his majesty should be restored; and Mr. Fox claimed this high office in the name, and on the behalf of the heir-apparent, as appertaining to his royal highness of right. On the other hand, Mr. Pitt and his adherents, who formed by far the most numerous body, both in and out of parliament, maintained, that the heir to the crown was merely a subject; that it was little short of treason against the constitution to urge his right to the regency, and that it belonged entirely to the two remaining branches of the legislature to supply the temporary deficiency.

Long and violent debates ensued in parliament, on

the restraints under which the minister thought it necessary to subject the prince of Wales, as regent, in the exercise of his authority. A last, the regency-bill was about to pass,* when, to the unspeakable joy of the nation, as well as of every member of his august family, his majesty, on the 10th of March, sent a [1789] message to parliament, to acquaint them with his recovery, and his ability to attend to the public business of the kingdom. These tidings diffused an universal and heartfelt satisfaction. Every town, every village, exhibited its testimonies of loyalty and affection to the best of sovereigns at the instant; and these were renewed on the 23d of April, when his majesty, in solemn procession, went to St. Paul's cathedral, to return thanks to Heaven for his recovery.

In the month of July in this year, one of the most unexpected and extraordinary revolutions took place in France that the annals of history record. The deranged state of the finances of France, and the mild disposition and moderate principles of Louis XVI., the reigning sovereign, inducing him to assemble the notables of his kingdom, an opportunity was taken to subvert the monarchy, and to reduce the king to a state of degradation, which prevented him not only from doing wrong, but from rendering any essential service to the state. The bastille, which had long been used for the most despotic purposes, was suddenly levelled to the ground, and the prisoners liberated; while a national assembly, chosen by the people, wrested from the king the privilege of making war or peace, and abolished all titles of peerage and distinction of orders. The frame of government was entirely changed, and a limited hereditary monarchy was established, in which the legislative authority was rendered superior to the executive, the latter being allowed only a suspensive vote. The person of the king was declared inviolable, and the throne indivisible.

Some British adventurers having established a set-

* The parliament of Ireland invited the prince of Wales to accept the regency without any limitation, while the British legislature imposed many restrictions.

tlement at Nootka or King's Sound,* on the north-west coast of America, for the purpose of trading with the natives for furs, the Spaniards, who claimed the exclusive sovereignty of this coast, from Cape Horn to the sixtieth degree of north latitude, 1790] seized on the fort, and captured such English vessels as were found trading in those parts. This conduct produced remonstrances to the court of Spain; but the Spaniards being unwilling to make any atonement for the act of violence of which they had been guilty, both nations prepared for war. The matter, however, was at last settled by a convention, by which Spain conceded every point in dispute, though the Spanish flag at the fort and settlement of Nootka was never struck.

By an act passed in the next session of parliament, Canada was divided into two distinct governments, to each of which a legislative council and assembly were appointed, after the model of the British constitution. The councils were nominated by the sovereign, and the houses of assembly were chosen by the people. The habeas corpus act, became a fundamental law of the constitution of Canada; and the British parliament were restrained from imposing any other taxes than such as were necessary for the regulation of trade and commerce. This wise and salutary measure has been productive of the best effects, and will probably secure the dependence of that province on Great Britain, by the strong tie of gratitude and interest.

In the course of this year, England was nearly involved in hostilities with Russia. That power, leagued with Austria, had for some time carried on a war against the Turks. The Germans, however, were very unsuccessful in this unjust warfare; but the Russians defeated the Turks in every battle, and took from them several strong places, particularly Oczakow and Ismael. At the latter, the Turks made a gallant resistance; but the savage Suwarroff, who commanded the Russians; caused about thirty thousand of the inhabitants to be put to death, and thus fixed an indelible stain on his character.

These successes, and the cruelties which accompanied them, alarmed the British court, and a large

* First discovered by captain Cook, in his last voyage round the world

fleet was fitted out, in order to prevent Russia from obtaining the navigation of the Black Sea; but the majorities which the minister was able to command in parliament on this occasion, being very inconsiderable, and the popular voice being decidedly against the policy of going to war with Russia, the armament was laid aside, after an enormous expense had been incurred, and the Porte concluded a peace with the czarina on her own terms. In justice, however, to administration, it should be observed, that the measures which they adopted on this occasion were founded in wisdom and sound policy; and that, if their designs had not been counteracted by the violence of faction in parliament, whose sentiments prevailed among the great mass of the people, it seems probable the partition of Poland, and other encroachments and revolutions which followed, might have been prevented.

The events which had taken place in France had excited much interest in this country, and provoked discussions which occasioned the supporters of the French revolution to be regarded as inimical to the British constitution, while the opponents of that measure were considered as the faithful guardians and defenders of our excellent establishment in church and state. It was, indeed, natural that the dawn of liberty in a country long enslaved should be hailed with joy by the generous sympathy of Britons, who had long enjoyed the blessings of civil and religious liberty; but it was not to be expected, that the anarchy and violence which prevailed in France would have been regarded with any other feelings than those of detestation and abhorrence, and that the friends of the British constitution would have evinced their approbation of principles, which they saw perverted, and applied to the most dangerous purposes.

On the anniversary of the 14th of July, the day on [1791] which the bastille had been demolished, the partisans of liberty in this country agreed to celebrate that event by festive meetings in several of the principal towns and cities of the kingdom. This was certainly an act of indiscretion, as the French revolution had incurred great odium by the events which had lately taken place in France, and as the spirit of

party prevailed in a most violent degree at this time in England. In Birmingham, where great animosity had long subsisted between the high-church party and the dissenters, at the head of whom was the justly celebrated philosopher, Dr. Priestley, the meeting was attended with the most lamentable consequences. The persons who there assembled to commemorate the French revolution, were insulted by a furious mob, who shouted "church and king," and who broke the windows of the hotel in which the company were assembled. Incited and inflamed by their leaders, the mob dispersed over the town and its vicinity, set on fire the meeting-houses, and the dwellings of the most eminent dissenters, and giving a loose to every kind of intemperance, became equally formidable to both parties. The mansion of Dr. Priestley was consumed, with his valuable library and philosophical apparatus; and thus a man, whose talents would have been an honour to any country, was treated by these Vandals as a foe to the human race, and ultimately obliged to take shelter in America. No effectual effort was employed to check these infamous and disgraceful proceedings, till the arrival of some troops of dragoons from Nottingham, when, after four days of tumult and devastation, order and tranquillity were restored. Many of the rioters were brought to trial, and three of them capitally punished.

In the East Indies, earl Cornwallis, who had been appointed governor-general of Bengal, carried on with equal conduct and good fortune the war against Tippoo Saib, in which this country had been involved by the intrigues of the French. After overcoming all impediments, he formed the siege of Seringapatam, the capital of Mysore, and obliged Tippoo to conclude a peace on the terms offered to him, and to give his two sons as hostages for the performance of its conditions.

When parliament met, Mr. Pitt, to the agreeable
1792] surprise of the nation, proved that the finances were in such a flourishing state, that government would be enabled to lighten the burdens of the people, by taking off taxes to the amount of two hundred thousand pounds a-year, and, at the same time, to appropriate double that sum for the reduction of

the national debt. He also observed, that the general state of affairs in Europe promised a continuance of peace, and that he expected an immediate reduction of the naval and military establishments. These brilliant prospects, however, were obscured before the conclusion of the year.

The continental powers, jealous of the principles which had been developed in the French revolution, held a secret convention at Pilnitz, in Lusatia, where it was determined to prepare for war against France. The haughty demands of restitution urged by the emperor, left no other alternative to the French people than to declare war against Austria; and Prussia joining against France, it was evident that Great Britain could not long be kept out of the vortex. The combined armies of Austria and Prussia entered France under the duke of Brunswick, accompanied by the Prussian monarch in person; and, under the sanction of the two courts, was issued a proclamation, which denounced the most dreadful vengeance against the French nation, and threatened to punish as rebels to their king, and destroyers of the public tranquillity, all such as were found in arms against the troops of the allied powers.

This savage and impolitic manifesto, which seemed purposely calculated to complete the ruin of the French king, filled up the measure of the popular fury. The palace of the Thuilleries was attacked by the Parisian populace; and, being resolutely defended by the Swiss guards, a most bloody
 Aug. 10, 1792. conflict ensued, which terminated in the total defeat and destruction of the guards, and the complete triumph of the Parisians. The king, with the queen, at the commencement of the engagement, had made a precipitate retreat to the hall of the national assembly, and that unfeeling body committed them close prisoners to the temple. Soon after, Louis XVI. was formally deposed, and the abolition of royalty in France decreed by the national convention. Massacres, unparalleled in the annals of civilized nations, were perpetrated under the sacred name of liberty. The prisons were forced open; and all those
 Sept. 2. murdered, who had been confined for imputed sentiments of royalty. In short, the party which

had usurped all power in France, were guilty of atrocities, which to relate in simple terms, would turn humanity pale. On this occasion, the princess Lamballe was one of the many victims to their infernal vengeance; and her fate was attended with such circumstances of horror as could scarcely enter into the imagination of man.

After the deposition of Louis, our ambassador was recalled from Paris; and though Chauvelin, the French ambassador, still remained in London, he was not acknowledged in any official capacity. Not only were the Austrian and Prussian armies compelled to evacuate France, but the French general Dumourier overran the Low Countries in a series of triumphs; and, before the year had closed, the whole of the Austrian Netherlands, with the exception of Luxembourg and Liege, had submitted to the arms of the republican invaders. In the exultation occasioned by these successes, the convention passed their famous decree, offering fraternity and assistance to all nations engaged in a struggle for liberty; and, on the capture of Antwerp, they declared the navigation of the Scheldt free, which this country was bound by treaty to resist.

These decrees were justly obnoxious to the British ministry, as encouraging sedition and revolt in every monarchical government, and treating with contempt the rights of neutral nations. A royal proclamation appeared, in which it was declared, that evil disposed persons in this country were acting in concert with others in foreign parts, in order to subvert the laws and constitution; and avowing his majesty's design of forthwith embodying a part of the militia. Considerable alarm was spread through the sound part of the nation, of which description the majority was immense; and both public bodies and private individuals testified their zeal for preserving the public peace and supporting the constitution of their country. Numerous associations were formed against republicans and levellers; loyal addresses poured in from all parts; and the pulpit and the press were alike employed in recommending social order, and in disseminating those principles which had raised Britain to a state of unexampled political happiness.

When the parliament met, the infamous fraternizing

decree of France having excited just alarm and indignation, a bill was passed, by which his majesty should be empowered to order aliens to quit the kingdom, as circumstances might justify or policy require. It was now sufficiently evident, that hostilities between Great Britain and France would not be long deferred.

A sentiment of horror pervaded the nation, when intelligence was received of the condemnation and public execution of the unfortunate Louis XVI., the [1793] mildest and most inoffensive of a long line of kings, who suffered death by the punishment of the guillotine, on the 21st of January. The parliament being sitting, advantage was taken of the sensation which this melancholy event produced, to unite all parties in the vigorous prosecution of a war, for which preparations had long been making. Chauvelin, the accredited minister of Louis XVI., was ordered to quit the kingdom; and the French republic, regarding his dismissal as a direct act of hostility, declared war against the king of Great Britain and the prince of Orange, as Stadtholder of the United Provinces.

The necessity of this war, which was actively undertaken by this country without any formal declaration, was warmly disputed in parliament; and it was affirmed that hostilities with France, on the grounds alleged by ministers, were neither for the honour nor the interest of Great Britain. The English troops, under the command of the duke of York, having joined those of Austria and Prussia, the combined armies defeated the French generals, Valence, Miranda, Dumourier, and Dampierre, and took the cities of Valenciennes, Condé, Mentz, and Quesnoy. It was resolved in a council of war, that the British, Hanoverians, and Dutch, should separate from the main army, and attack West Flanders. Accordingly, the British forces, under the duke of York, made an attempt on Dunkirk; but the English army was compelled to retreat, with the loss of all its heavy artillery.

Meanwhile, the fury of the jacobins in France roused the people in several provinces to resistance; and lord Hood being cruising in the Mediterranean, the inhabitants of Toulon entered into a negotiation with him, and delivered into his possession the town and

the shipping; but the republicans, collecting a large irregular force, attacked the place with such impetuosity, that the English were obliged to withdraw, after destroying nine of the enemy's ships of the line and some frigates.

Though this campaign was on the whole successful on the side of the allies, yet its termination was by no means equally auspicious as its commencement. They had preserved Holland, and recovered the Netherlands; but the tide of success was now turned against the confederates, who, acting without any regularly concerted plan, showed alternate vigour and irresolution.

At home, revolutionary doctrines were industriously propagated, and seditious societies formed; and several persons of talents, who had lent their aid in promoting schemes dangerous to the constitution, were arrested and brought to trial. By the severity of the laws of Scotland, some of them, being convicted of sedition in that country, were sentenced to be transported to Botany Bay, which was accordingly carried into execution; but in England, the promoters of disorder and confusion, who had been indicted for high treason, were all eventually acquitted. The merits of the judgments on the delinquents in Scotland afterwards underwent a discussion in parliament.

A message from the king to both houses of parliament 1794] announced the avowed intentions of the enemy to invade this country. A great augmentation of the militia, and an addition of volunteer sensible corps, were accordingly voted. The ardour with which young men of all ranks entered into these military associations, for the purpose of defending their country, equally damped the resolution of domestic traitors and foreign foes; and the preparations which had been made for invading England, began to slacken, and were at last wholly discontinued.

On the continent, the arms of the allies, from a want of cordial co-operation, had experienced many reverses; but the English were consoled by the splendid naval victory obtained by lord Howe over June 1, the French fleet, which had ventured from 1794 Brest harbour, for the purpose of protecting a large convoy from America. In this action, which

was warmly contested, the French suffered a total defeat, with the loss of six ships of the line taken, and one sunk. The French fleet consisted of twenty-six sail of the line, and the English of twenty-five.

In the West Indies, Martinico, St. Lucie, and Guadeloupe, were successively captured; and in the East, Pondicherry, Chandernagore, and Mahie, fell under the power of the English. In short, signal as had been the disasters of the allied armies on the continent, in almost every enterprise in which the British were singly engaged, they were completely successful.

An accession was made to the British empire by the annexation of Corsica to the crown of England; but policy, or necessity, in a short time compelled this country to abandon an island, which would ever have been attended with more expense than advantage.

When the victories of the French in the Netherlands had removed their apprehensions from foreign enemies, their attention was directed to internal tyranny. After the jacobins had triumphed over the girondists, they were themselves divided into two parties. Those called the faction of the cordeliers, being opposed to the views of Robespierre, who had made rapid strides to single despotism, were arrested by his orders, and put to death. The French people, however, no sooner considered the atrocities of which Robespierre had been guilty, than a powerful party was formed against him; and the fall of the tyrant put an end to the reign of terror in France; but under every successive faction, the arms of the republic prevailed on the continent, and at once Germany, Spain, and Italy, felt their irresistible force. The United Provinces were speedily overrun by a French army; and the stadtholder, with his family, sought refuge in England.

In this year, Poland, overwhelmed by a foreign despotism, was blotted out from the number of European kingdoms, and its territories were divided between Prussia, Austria, and Russia, the three powers that conspired and effected its ruin.

The splendid successes of the French in the last
1795] campaign, had disposed most of the neighbouring powers to acknowledge the republic. Prus-

sia and Spain concluded a treaty with France; and Holland being *fraternized* by the French, the Dutch, from long treacherous friends, became the open enemies of this country. Warm debates took place in the British parliament on the subject of peace; but the warlike proposals of ministers were still supported by great majorities. At this period of the contest, the nation seemed wearied and dispirited; but another victory by sea, gained by lord Bridport, off port l'Orient, tended to encourage the people, and to convince them that they were invulnerable on their native element. The engagement began early in the morning, and continued till three in the afternoon, by which time three ships of the line had struck their colours. The rest of the French squadron, keeping close in shore, escaped into l'Orient.

In the spring of this year, his royal highness the prince of Wales contracted a matrimonial alliance with his cousin, the princess Caroline Amelia, daughter of the duke of Brunswick. This marriage, which gave great joy to the people, eventually proved a source of much domestic misery and national inquietude. In the following year, the princess gave birth to a daughter; and, soon after, a formal separation of the parents took place.

Various circumstances had inspired the English people with a spirit of discontent. The cruel and illegal practices of crimps for the recruiting service had occasioned several violent tumults; and the increasing scarcity of provisions aggravated the public ill-humour. The reforming societies began to act with great boldness; and that denominated the Corresponding Society held several public meetings, one of which, in the fields near Copenhagen House, was computed to be attended by fifty thousand persons, and was distinguished by the daring addresses made to the people. On the first day of the meeting of parliament, his majesty was grossly insulted in passing to the house of lords by a furious mob, who clamorously demanded peace, and the dismissal of Mr. Pitt.

In consequence of this outrage, two bills passed both houses of parliament: one for the better security of his majesty's person, by extending the laws of treason to his majesty's person, by extending the laws of treason on; the other, for the prevention of seditious

meetings. These bills, however, did not pass without strong opposition.

This year, that valuable settlement, the Cape of Good Hope, and part of Ceylon, were wrested from the Dutch: but an expedition to Quiberon, in which were embarked about three thousand French emigrants, entirely failed.

An overture was made by the British government to negotiate a peace with France; but it was so captiously, not to say insolently received, that it was impossible to take any farther steps for the attainment of this object. The truth seems to be, that the two governments were less inclined to a pacification than the people, who were anxious to be relieved from a war, the evils of which were severely felt, and the eventual advantages of which they did not comprehend, or did not think sufficient to compensate the pressures under which they laboured.

During the last campaign, the French had been less successful than in the former year; but the directory made vigorous preparations for placing the numerous armies of the republic in a most formidable posture; and the success of the French arms was not surpassed in any former period. In Italy, the republican troops 1796] were commanded by general Bonaparte,* whose advance into that country was an almost uninterrupted career of victory. He defeated the imperialists at Lodi, and compelled nearly the whole of Italy to sue for peace. In Germany, too, the campaign began successfully on the side of the French; and generals Moreau and Jourdan penetrated to the very heart of the empire; but they were afterwards repelled by the archduke Charles, who drove back the invaders.

Hence the love of peace became more and more felt by the British and the Austrians, who now alone

* Napoleon Bonaparte was a native of Corsica, where he was born in 1769. With the most intrepid courage, and an aspiring ambition, he possessed talents of the first order, which raised him to the summit of power in France, and rendered him formidable to all the neighbouring nations. After seating himself on the throne of the Bourbons, the whole of Europe, with the exception of Great Britain, submitted to the will of this wonderful man.

remained of the grand confederacy which had been formed against France ; but in proportion as the enemy was successful, he increased in his demands, and refused to listen to equal terms of accommodation. To evince the sincerity of their desire for peace, the British ministry sent lord Malmesbury as plenipotentiary to Paris to open a negotiation with the French republic. A mutual restitution of conquests was the basis on which his lordship was empowered to treat ; but the French refusing to restore the Netherlands, ordered lord Malmesbury to quit Paris in forty-eight hours, and the French territory with as much expedition as possible. Whether either of the two governments was really desirous of peace at this time, seems very doubtful.

At the close of this year, the French, encouraged by reports of disaffection in Ireland, attempted, with thirteen ships of the line, and a large body of troops, to make a descent at Bantry-bay ; but the winds dispersing the armament, the commander-in-chief, who had arrived at his place of destination, returned to Brest with the loss of one ship of the line and two frigates.

In Saldanna bay, a Dutch fleet of seven sail of the line, which had sailed in hopes of retaking the Cape of Good Hope, was captured by admiral Elphinstone ; and thus ended a campaign, in which Britain was uniformly successful on her own element.

The aspect of affairs, however, was gloomy and dismal. The rapid and enormous increase of the national debt had created an alarm among the proprietors of the public funds ; and the bank having advanced immense and extraordinary sums to government, it was found expedient to stop the payment in specie. This strong measure, which necessity alone could justify, caused a great sensation ; but it appearing that the bank had still a great surplus property, confidence was restored ; and the notes of the bank passed as freely as ever, though the prohibition of payment in cash was ordered to be continued.

Scarcely had the public alarm from the bank subsided, when other dangers occasioned equal dread and consternation. A serious mutiny broke out among the seamen of the channel fleet lying at Spithead ; but on obtaining an increase of pay, which the circumstances

of the times and their own merits rendered necessary, order and discipline were speedily re-established.

It was hoped, that the concession of government would have prevented any fresh insurrection; but a mutiny broke out at the *Nore*, much more outrageous and full of danger. New and extravagant demands were dictated to the Admiralty, delegates were chosen to conduct the meeting, and one Richard Parker was appointed admiral of the mutinous fleet. The firmness of government, however, and the enactment of two bills, denouncing death against all who should seduce any of his majesty's seamen from their duty or hold any communication with ships in a state of mutiny, at length overawed those misguided men. The red flag of mutiny was struck; and many of the ringleaders, among whom was Parker, suffered deserved punishment.

To these disgraceful proceedings in the channel, the successful bravery of our seamen against the enemy forms a striking contrast. Admiral sir John Jervis, commanding fifteen sail of the line, fell in with a Spanish fleet of twenty-seven sail off Cape St. Vincent; and, after an engagement of five hours, in which the great superiority of British tactics, skill, and bravery, was displayed, captured four of the number. The honour of a peerage was deservedly bestowed on the gallant admiral, with the title of earl St. Vincent, in allusion to the scene of this glorious achievement.

After this victory, rear-admiral Nelson, who had particularly distinguished himself in the action, was sent with a flotilla to make a nocturnal attack on the town of Santa Cruz, in the island of Teneriffe. This attempt, however, was unsuccessful: the gallant admiral lost an arm; and one hundred and fifty men were either killed or wounded in the assault.

Admiral Duncan, who had long been engaged in blocking up the Dutch fleet in the *Foxel*, Oct. 11, 1797, having returned to England to refit, the enemy ventured to sea. Duncan hastily returning, disposed his squadron in such a manner as to prevent the Dutch from escaping without a conflict. The action was extremely obstinate; but, at last, nine of the largest ships, and two admirals, were the trophies of British prowess. For this service, the gallant ad-

miral was raised to a peerage, by the style and title of lord viscount Duncan, of Camperdown, off which place this victory was achieved.

Meanwhile, the British government attempted to renew the negotiation for peace; and lord Malmesbury was again commissioned to proceed to Lisle; but the French requiring that England should restore all the possessions which had been taken from France, Spain, and Holland, without offering any compensation on the part of those powers, the British plenipotentiary found it necessary to return.

About this time, however, the Austrians being completely discomfited in Italy, the emperor was induced to sign a definitive treaty with the French republic, at Campo Formio; and thus Great Britain was left singly to combat with an enemy, strengthened by a large accession of territory and population, after all the other powers had been successively withdrawn, or intimidated from our alliance.

Ireland, which had long been agitated by foreign and domestic enemies, became this year the scene of an unnatural rebellion. The United Irishmen, who had formed a conspiracy against government, being disappointed in their expectations of receiving assistance from France, prepared for an extensive insurrection, without waiting for a co-operation from the continent. Stimulated by some persons of rank and consequence among them, they were guilty of the most savage atrocities; and a few of the principal traitors being themselves betrayed, their wretched adherents, finding concealment no longer possible, broke out into open rebellion.

It would be painful to enter into the details of the cruelties and murders which were perpetrated in that unhappy country. In this unnatural contest, in which one part of the British empire warred with the rest, numbers of the insurgents fell; while the survivors of the United Irishmen wreaked their vengeance on the unhappy prisoners that fell into their hands.

At last earl Camden was recalled, and the marquis Cornwallis, who, to the highest personal character united splendid military talents, was appointed to the vice-royalty of Ireland. By offering pardon to all, except to the leaders in the rebellion, he prevailed on

the greatest part of the insurgents to surrender their arms, and take the oath of allegiance to his majesty; and the rest were defeated or awed by the king's troops.

The French, with a small body of forces, endeavoured to revive the rebellion; and, surprising our troops by their sudden appearance, gained a temporary advantage, but were soon overpowered and captured by lord Cornwallis. A French squadron of one ship of the line and eight frigates, with troops and ammunition on board, destined for Ireland, was taken and dispersed by sir John Borlase Warren; and the whole French equipment, with the exception of two frigates, fell ultimately into the hands of the English.

Meanwhile, Bonaparte had sailed from Toulon with an armament, consisting of thirteen ships of the line, six frigates, and transports, having on board an army of thirty thousand men. Malta capitulated to this armament, by the treachery of some of the chiefs of that island; and steering its course for Egypt, the French debarked their forces in that country, which they speedily overran, notwithstanding the spirited opposition of the Mamelukes.

Admiral Nelson, who had been detached by lord St. Vincent, in quest of the enemy, with thirteen sail of the line and one fifty-gun ship, found the French fleet at anchor in the bay of Aboukir. A severe

Aug. 1, 1798. and obstinate engagement ensued; and, after a dreadful conflict, a complete victory rewarded the skill and gallantry of the British admiral, his officers, and men. Besides the French flag-ship of 120 guns, one 74 was burnt; one of 80 guns and seven of 74, were captured; two ships of the line and two frigates escaped by flight, but were soon after taken. If Bonaparte had not possessed great talents and a fertile genius, this victory, which deprived his army of all communication with Europe, would have completely paralyzed the expedition to Egypt. For this service the admiral was created lord Nelson of the Nile, and received a pension of 2000*l.* besides other honours and rewards which were bestowed on him by some of the sovereigns of Europe.

The grand seignior now declared war against France; and Paul, the new emperor of Russia, in whose char-

seth passion and stivility were chiefly predominant, displayed his detestation of French principles, and was subsidised by England. The emperor of Germany also joined the confederacy against France; and the republic had again to contend with another powerful alliance.

Meanwhile, the assessed taxes not having proved so productive as had been expected, the minister had recourse to a tax on income, requiring one tenth on all incomes exceeding two hundred pounds a-year.

A measure, however, which will immortalize the memory of the premier, and deserve the lasting gratitude of both countries, was his projected union with Ireland; which, after being canvassed with great attention in England, and violently opposed in Ireland, was at last carried into effect, on principles peculiarly favourable to the real interests of the latter country.

The arms of Russia speedily gave a new turn to the war in Italy; the English recovered Naples for its former sovereign; and sir Sidney Smith, by his bravery and able conduct, repelled an invasion of Syria, headed by Bonaparte himself.

The perfidy and duplicity of Tippo Saib having occasioned a new war in India, general Harris, 1799] with equal success and ability, made himself master of Seringapatam, in storming which the tyrant of the Mysore fell in action, and with him the empire which had been established by his father Hyder Ally. The greater part of his dominions were seized by the East-India Company, and his family were sent to Calcutta.

While the allies were engaged in endeavouring to make an impression upon France, Great Britain undertook an expedition to detach the Batavian republic from its connexion with the French; and a powerful armament was sent to Holland, under the command of the duke of York. On the 27th of August, sir Ralph Abercrombie, with the British and Russian troops, landed at the Helder, and defeated the forces opposed to them, after a short and sharp conflict. Soon after, however, the duke of York assuming the command, the enemy having assembled in great force, and the season being too far advanced to suffer them to continue in the field, in a hostile country, the English

were obliged to abandon the enterprise with great loss.

Meanwhile Bonaparte left the army which he commanded in Egypt, and embarking in an armed vessel, reached France in safety. The divisions and intrigues in the French directory, aided by the popularity which he had acquired, enabled him to seize the reins of government; and dissolving the council of five hundred, he established a new constitution, the executive part of which was vested in himself as first consul, with two subordinate consuls as his colleagues.

On his accession to the consular government, Bonaparte addressed a letter to the king of Great Britain, and requested his majesty to concur with him in restoring peace to the world; but these overtures being rejected under the plea that his continuance in power might be as unstable as his predecessors, he prepared to carry on the war with vigour. At Marengo, June 14, 1800, he gave the Austrians a most signal defeat, and obliged the emperor to conclude the treaty of Luneville. Malta having submitted to the arms of England, after a blockade of two years, the French entered into a treaty for evacuating Egypt; but the British government unhappily refusing to ratify this convention, which had been formed under the auspices of sir Sidney Smith, the French general in that country recommenced hostilities; and in order to expel the enemy from that province, without which our India possessions could not have been secure, sir Ralph Abercrombie was sent into Egypt with a powerful army. On the 21st of March, 1801, that gallant veteran defeated the French general, Menou, with great loss, but was mortally wounded in the action, and died a few days after, equally beloved and revered for his private virtues as for his military talents. General Hutchinson, who succeeded to the command, completed the reduction of Egypt.

Meanwhile, as the union between Great Britain and Ireland had been fixed by the legislature to commence and be in force from the first day of the nineteenth century, the imperial parliament of both islands met at Westminster, on the 22d of January. The emperor of Russia had not only withdrawn himself from the confederacy against France, but listening to the counsels of Bonaparte, had stimulated Denmark

and Sweden to enter into an armed neutrality against this country. When all Europe was thus combined against Britain, and almost every port shut against us, Mr. Pitt and his principal coadjutors resigned their situations. The minister, apprehending, as has been supposed, that his continuance in office might prove an impediment to the restoration of peace, or, considering, as is more probable, and has been asserted, that his pledge to the catholics at the time of the union, required either the fulfilment of his promise or the sacrifice of his place, relinquished all his employments. Mr. Addington, speaker of the house of commons, was appointed first lord of the treasury and chancellor of the exchequer; lord Hawkesbury, secretary of state for the foreign department; and earl St. Vincent, first lord of the admiralty.

The king of Prussia earnestly promoted the northern confederacy, and sent an army into Hanover; but a British fleet, under admirals sir Hyde Parker and lord Nelson, being despatched to open the Baltic, an 1801] engagement took place at Copenhagen, which had been strongly fortified, when the result was a complete victory on the part of the English, chiefly obtained by the intrepid conduct of lord Nelson. After this bloody battle, an armistice was agreed on; and the emperor Paul being succeeded by his son Alexander, the northern confederacy was dissolved, and peace was restored between England and the nations of which it was composed.

The chief difficulty in regard to a pacification with France being removed by the evacuation of Egypt by the French, preliminaries of peace were signed on the 1st of October, to the unbounded joy of the united 1801] kingdom. The terms, however, were far from giving universal satisfaction, and many saw in them the seeds of a new war at no great distance; but, after various delays and difficulties, a definitive treaty was signed at Amiens, on the 27th of March 1802] following. By this treaty, Great Britain restored to France and her allies, every possession or colony which she had taken from them during the war, except the Spanish island of Trinidad, and the Dutch settlement of Ceylon. Egypt was to be restored to the Porte; and the integrity of the Turkish em-

pire was guaranteed. The French were to evacuate the territories of Naples and of Rome. Malta was to be restored to its own order of knights.

It was soon, however, evident that the treaty of Amiens would not be productive of any long period of tranquillity. The restless ambition of Bonaparte, which, whilst it could not suffer neighbouring nations to repose in peace and security, was at last fatal to himself. No man, either of ancient or modern times, can be compared with this extraordinary person, who, as if regarding Europe as too confined a theatre for his ambition, grasped at the dominion of the whole world, and whose unparalleled life seems to resemble a fiction and romance, rather than a history of real actions.

His assumption of the presidency of the Italian republic, and the convention which he had formed with Spain, were objects of jealousy to the British government; but the subjugation of Switzerland was a wanton aggression, which excited indignation in the breast of every friend of liberty; and the aims at dominion which were every where visible, withheld the English ministry from surrendering Malta, unconditionally. This procured a rupture between the two countries, 1803] and war was proclaimed by Great Britain against France, on the 18th. of May.

One of the first measures of Bonaparte, after the renewal of hostilities, was to seize on the electorate of Hanover; but the invasion of England appeared at this time the principal object which occupied his attention. A flotilla was prepared for conveying the military hordes of France to the British shores; extensive camps were formed in the vicinity of the harbours; and the troops were kept in constant readiness for embarkation. Such, however, were the exertions made to receive the boasted invaders of England, that volunteer associations were every where formed; men of all ranks and professions, animated with one common feeling of indignation, devoted a great portion of their time to preparations for the defence of their country; and the whole kingdom presented the appearance of one wide tented field.

The regular military force of Great Britain was also augmented beyond all former precedent, and stationed

in different parts of the kingdom; while our fleets blockaded the enemy's ports; and confused their squadrons and flotillas within the protection of their own batteries.

Meanwhile, a new insurrection broke out in Dublin, which occasioned some alarm, but which was speedily repressed; but lord Kilwarden, and his nephew Mr. Wolfe, unfortunately passing at the time, were dragged out of their carriage by the insurgents, and barbarously put to death.

This year, the French government transferred Louisiana to the United States of America for the sum of three millions of dollars.

The majorities on the side of ministers being greatly reduced, by the opposition of Mr. Pitt, who 1804] had hitherto supported the administration, Mr. Addington resigned the office of chancellor of the exchequer and first lord of the treasury, and was succeeded by Mr. Pitt. At the same time the duke of Portland was appointed president of the council; and lord Eldon lord chancellor.

Various attempts against the enemy's flotillas on their own coasts were unsuccessful. The most considerable of this kind, was an undertaking by lord Keith, with a fleet of men of war and other ships, to destroy about one hundred and fifty French vessels, moored on the outside of Boulogne pier. The instruments chiefly depended on for this purpose, were certain exploding vessels called catamarans, which, however, entirely disappointed the expectations that had been formed.

Though Spain had not declared war against Britain, yet the English government considered that power as wholly under the control of Bonaparte; and a British squadron was, therefore, sent to intercept the Spanish frigates which conveyed specie from America to Cadiz. An engagement ensued, in which one of the Spanish vessels blew up; and the rest, with the treasure, fell into the hands of the English; but this act of the British government can scarcely be considered otherwise than as a violation of the law of nations.

The aggressions of Bonaparte in Germany and Italy, provoked another coalition among the European powers; and the "mighty army of England," which was

said to be intended for the invasion of this country, 1805] and which had remained nearly two years stationary and inactive, was withdrawn from the shores of the channel; but the fatal battle of Austerlitz destroyed the hopes of Russia and Austria, and compelled the latter power to accept such terms of accommodation as France thought fit to dictate.

Meanwhile Greece, which had been taken by the French, was recaptured; and the Dutch settlement of Surinam capitulated to a force under the command of sir Charles Green and commodore Hood. Bonaparte, on whom the people of France had conferred the rank and title of emperor of the French, made an overture to the king, in which he expressed a wish for peace, and deprecated the continuance of hostilities as tending to a useless effusion of blood. The reply of the British government declared, that the king, though ardently desirous of peace, was convinced that this object could be attained only by arrangements which should provide for the future safety and tranquillity of Europe, and, in consequence, till he had communicated with the continental powers, with whom he was engaged in confidential relations, he felt it impossible to give a more particular answer to the overture.

The misfortunes of our allies on the continent were in some degree compensated by the brilliant success which attended the fleets of Great Britain. A fleet of twelve French, and six Spanish ships of the line, had sailed for the West Indies, under the command of admiral Villeneuve; and lord Nelson, with only eleven sail of the line, pursued the French admiral, who, terrified by the intelligence of his approach, hastened back to Europe, and, near cape Finisterre, was encountered by sir Robert Calder, who took two of his large ships.

Soon after, the combined fleets of France and Spain, amounting to thirty-three sail of the line, again sailed under the same admiral, with the intention of giving battle to lord Nelson. The British admiral, however, had been reinforced with seven ships, which augmented his fleet to the number of twenty-seven sail of the line. On the 21st of October, lord Nelson, to his great joy, desisted the mighty armament of the ene-

my, about seven miles east of cape Trafalgar. The last memorable signal of the British admiral, "England expects every man to do his duty," was received with acclamations from the whole fleet. About noon, the dreadful contest began, by the leading ships of the British column breaking through the enemy's line. In this bloody battle, lord Nelson was mortally wounded by a musket-ball, fired from the shrouds of the Redoubtable, to which the admiral's ship, the Victory, was opposed, after having compelled Villeneuve to strike his flag on board the Bucentaur. The British hero, however, did not close his eyes in death till he had received assurance of a decisive victory, when, faintly smiling, he exclaimed, "God be praised!" and expired. In this engagement, nineteen of the enemy's ships were captured by the English. The patriotic hero, by whom this victory had been achieved, was interred in the most magnificent manner, at the public expense; the title of earl Nelson was conferred on his brother, with a suitable income; and monuments to the memory of him who had been the pride and the glory of his country, arose in all the principal towns of the empire.

Meanwhile, the arms of Britain were crowned with new triumphs in India, where sir Arthur Wellesley, now duke of Wellington, defeated Scindiah, a powerful Mahratta chieftain, and obliged him to cede a large tract of country to the British; and, before the close of the year 1805, a peace was concluded with Holkar, another Mahratta chief, who was also deprived of a very considerable extent of territory.

France and Prussia concluded a treaty, by which Hanover was transferred to the latter power; and Frederic William occupied nearly the whole of that electorate, the property of his old ally, with his troops.

The total failure of the continental coalition greatly augmented the gloom which prevailed in England in consequence of the alarming illness of Mr. Pitt. This distinguished statesman, whose infirm state of health had been increased by anxiety and disappointment, 1806] expired on the 23d of January, after having directed the affairs of this country for a longer period than any former minister. Under his auspices, the maritime supremacy of England was confirmed by

a series of most splendid victories; but the public burdens were enormously augmented. He laboured successfully to preserve Great Britain from the contagion of revolutionary principles; and he exerted himself with equal zeal, but with less success, to resist the military despotism by which France threatened to subjugate the continent. In short, he was a statesman of great ability and strength of mind, who rendered momentous services to his country; and it must be allowed, that never was the force of the British character tried by greater dangers, or graced by more splendid achievements, than under the administration of William Pitt.

On the death of this distinguished and disinterested statesman, lord Grenville was appointed first lord of the treasury; Mr. Fox, secretary of state for foreign affairs; lord Henry Petty, chancellor of the exchequer; and Mr. Windham, secretary of state for the department of war and the colonies.

About ten days after these appointments, a negotiation took place with France, which was no less singular in its commencement than fruitless in its result. A Frenchman, calling himself Gevilliere, disclosed to Mr. Fox a plan for the assassination of Bonaparte; but that minister dismissed the wretch with indignation, and informed the French government of the meditated crime. This extorted from Bonaparte a well merited compliment to the honour and generosity of Mr. Fox; and a negotiation for peace between the two countries commenced; but after being continued for a considerable length of time, the continental policy of France prevented a satisfactory issue.

One of the first measures of the new ministers was an increase on the income-tax, which, already odious and oppressive, was raised from five to ten per cent. on all incomes exceeding fifty pounds.

In the house of commons, Mr. Fox moved a resolution, which was carried into effect, and which may be said to have closed the parliamentary career of that great statesman. This resolution proposed to take effectual measures for abolishing the Slave Trade; and an address from both houses was carried to the king, beseeching him to obtain by negotiation the concurrence of foreign powers in the abolition of the same iniquitous traffic.

The Cape of Good Hope again surrendered to the British; but an attempt on Spanish South America, though at first successful, finally proved abortive. In Italy, however, the British arms were triumphant, and sir John Stuart defeated at Maida a French army under general Rognier, with great loss; but this brilliant victory, which was achieved with a comparatively small force, produced no permanent change in the state of the kingdom of Naples, though it preserved Sicily from invasion. Naples had been seized on by the French emperor, and Joseph Bonaparte was proclaimed king of that country.

The emperor Napoleon carried into effect a scheme for subverting the ancient constitution of the German empire, by establishing what was called the confederation of the Rhine. The members of this confederation were the emperor of the French, the kings of Bavaria and Wirtemberg, and several other German princes. Separating themselves from the Germanic empire, these princes chose Bonaparte for their protector, and established a federal alliance, by which they engaged to furnish a certain contingent of troops, in case of a continental war. Conformably to an arrangement with Napoleon, Francis resigned his office and title of emperor of Germany, and annexed his German provinces to the empire of Austria.

On the 13th of September died that illustrious statesman and friend to the human race, Charles James
1806] Fox, whose last moments were embittered, by finding that the ambition of Bonaparte deprived him of the pleasure dearest to his heart,—that of terminating the sufferings of distracted Europe, and restoring to his country the blessings of peace. As a senator, Mr. Fox was distinguished alike for the comprehensiveness of his views, the liberality of his principles, and the persuasive and convincing power of his eloquence; as a minister, he displayed in the management of public affairs, the same noble simplicity which characterized his conduct in private life; and, as a man, his great and amiable qualities acquired him the cordial affection of his friends, and the generous admiration of his adversaries.

On the death of this lamented statesman, lord Howick was appointed secretary of foreign affairs, and Mr. Gaspar Grey became first lord of the admiralty.

The fate of Prussia proved the danger to which all the old governments were exposed. After Napoleon was engaged in hostilities with Great Britain and Sweden, he rendered himself formidable to all Europe, by the promptness and energy of his conduct. Frederic William discovered that the French Emperor, who had guaranteed to him the possession of Hanover, was offering the restoration of that electorate as the basis of negotiation with the English court. Indignant at the danger of losing this acquisition, he resolved to try the hazard of war; and, after successive actions, in which the Prussians were uniformly defeated, a tremendous conflict took place on the 14th of October, in the plains between Weimar and Auerstadt. The issue of this engagement, in which Frederic William suffered a total defeat, laid Prussia at the mercy of Bonaparte, who took possession of Berlin, and completely subjugated that country. Between the French and Russian armies a series of bloody contests also took place, in which the former were uniformly victorious; and, at length, peace was signed at Tilsit by the emperors of France and Russia.

Napoleon now controlled the whole of the continent. His brother Louis was created king of Holland; his brother Joseph, king of Naples; and his brother Jerome was in person created king of Westphalia, with territories ceded by Prussia and other neighbouring states. Napoleon himself was not only emperor of France, but also king of Italy; and Spain was entirely subservient to the policy of that ambitious and daring, though able ruler.

Whilst at Berlin, Bonaparte issued a decree, interdicting all commerce and correspondence between the countries under his control and the British Islands, which he declared to be in a state of blockade.

The well known reluctance of the king to extend the privileges of the catholics, did not prevent lord Grenville and his associates from introducing a bill into parliament, for the purpose of empowering persons of that persuasion to fill the highest offices in the army and the navy. The king expressed his decided objection to this measure, and demanded from his ministers a written pledge, that they would never

again bring forward any proposal connected with the catholic question. As the ministers could not assent to this, they resigned their situations, and a new administration was formed. The duke of Portland was appointed first lord of the treasury; Mr. Perceval, chancellor of the exchequer; lord Eldon, lord chancellor; lord Liverpool, secretary for the home department; lord Castlereagh, secretary for the war department; and Mr. Canning, secretary for foreign affairs.

A new parliament was assembled, which fully established the strength of the new ministers; 1807] and the first important measure was a plan for increasing the regular army from the militia, and supplying the deficiencies arising from such a transfer, by a supplementary militia. In the beginning of this year, the island of Curaçoa surrendered to the English.

A confederacy of the northern powers against Britain being now apprehended, the ministers sent a powerful armament against Denmark, which was compelled to surrender her fleet to the English, after the bombardment of her capital. This measure justly excited the indignation of Europe, and gave to the enemies of Great Britain, a plausible pretext for their hostility.

In consequence of the decree of Bonaparte from Berlin, the English ministers issued orders, subjecting all ports and places in Europe, from which the British flag was excluded, and all those in the colonies of his majesty's enemies, to the restrictions consequent on actual blockade, declaring all trade in the produce or manufactures of such countries or colonies to be unlawful, and authorizing the capture of all vessels engaged in that trade. To these orders Bonaparte published a rejoinder at Milan, in which he decreed, that all ships which should be searched by a British vessel, or should pay any tax to the English government, were denationalized, and might be lawfully captured wherever found.

These conflicting regulations respecting the trade of neutrals, occasioned an act in the American congress, imposing a strict embargo on all vessels belonging to the American states, and commanding all foreign ships to quit the harbours of the United States.

The designs of Bonaparte against Spain became daily more manifest; and a treaty was concluded at Fontainebleau for the partition of Portugal. A French army was already on its march to Lisbon, when the Portuguese fleet set sail from the Tagus, Nov. 29, 1807, with the prince regent and the whole royal family on board, and proceeded to Rio de Janeiro, escorted by an English squadron. The French army under Junot, already on the heights above Lisbon, took possession of that capital, and subjected the inhabitants to military law.

Madeira was placed under the protection of the English; and the Danish islands in the West Indies, St. Thomas, St. John and St. Croix, surrendered to a British squadron under sir Alexander Cochrane.

The French had obtained possession of the principal fortresses in Spain; and the approach of Murat, with a powerful army to the capital, increased the alarm of the Spanish people. Charles IV. abdicated the crown in favour of his son, the prince of the Asturias, who commenced his reign under the title of Ferdinand the Seventh; but this arrangement did not suit the policy of France, and, the father and son quarrelling, Charles transferred to Napoleon the sovereignty of Spain, who, having persuaded Ferdinand to meet him at Bayonne, compelled him to renounce the crown in favour of his family. Charles, his queen, 1808] and Godoy, prince of the peace, retired to Rome; and Joseph Bonaparte was installed king of Spain and the Indies; while Joachim Murat, the brother-in-law of the French emperor, was made king of Naples.

These transactions, however, did not take place without causing great commotions and much effusion of blood in Spain; and the Spanish people, exasperated by the cruelties committed by the French in that country, declared war against France, and sent deputies to implore the assistance of England. This request was readily granted, and a force of ten thousand men sailed to Corunna, under the command of sir Arthur Wellesley; but on communicating with the Spanish leaders in that district, it was determined to proceed to Portugal, where the troops were disembarked in Mondego-bay. Junot, collecting his whole

force, attacked the British army in a strong position at Vimiera; but, after an obstinate contest, the French were defeated with the loss of between three and four thousand men. Sir Hew Dalrymple, who arrived from Gibraltar to assume the command of the British army, concluded a disgraceful convention at Cintra, by which the French troops were sent to France, at the expense of the English government, without being considered as prisoners of war.

The command of the British army in Portugal devolved on Sir John Moore, who arrived with a reinforcement of twelve thousand men. That officer had been intrusted with an expedition for the assistance of Sweden, against which war had been declared by Russia, Prussia, and Denmark; but through the capricious and violent conduct of the Swedish monarch, he had been constrained to return without landing his troops.

Meanwhile, the disasters which befel the French armies in Spain, intimidated Joseph Bonaparte, who, after a residence of ten days in Madrid, decamped from that capital, taking with him the regalia and crown jewels, and some other valuables from the palace and treasury. On this occasion, the Spaniards contemptuously observed, that "Joseph had put into his pocket the crown, which he durst not wear upon his head."

The French emperor, indignant at the conduct of the Spaniards, and the discomfiture of his armies, announced to his legislative body, that, placing himself at the head of his troops, he would crown his brother at Madrid, and plant his eagles on the fortresses of Portugal. Accordingly, a large and overwhelming force entered Spain; and the undisciplined troops of that country were easily defeated by the hosts of French veterans, commanded by the most able generals, and animated by the presence of Napoleon.

By the representations and remonstrances of Mr. Frere, the English minister at Madrid, Sir John Moore had been urged to direct his march to that capital; but hearing that Madrid had surrendered to the French, and that Napoleon was marching against it with a great body of forces, the English general

GEORGE III.

found himself compelled to retreat. The distresses which the British army suffered in this retreat were dreadful. With few intervals of repose, which the French forces allowed them, they traversed two hundred and fifty miles in a mountainous country, in the middle of a severe winter, and by roads almost impassable. At length, after a most painful and harassing retreat, in which they lost several thousand men, 1809] the British army reached Corunna on the 12th of January; and on the 16th of that month, when the embarkation of the troops was about to commence, they were attacked by the French, under the command of marshal Soult. The British, however, though inferior in number, exhausted by harassing marches, and deprived of their artillery, which had been embarked, repulsed the enemy, and achieved a victory under the most adverse circumstances; but, in this engagement, the English lost their brave commander, who was killed by a cannon-ball, and who, in his last moments, expressed a hope that his country would do him justice.

Sir Arthur Wellesley being again appointed to the command of the army in the peninsula, landed with reinforcements in Portugal. Soult was driven from Oporto; and Sir Arthur Wellesley, joined by the Spanish general Cuesta, hastened to meet marshal Victor in the south. The allied army was strongly posted at Talavera, where it was attacked by Victor. An obstinate engagement ensued, in which the French were defeated with the loss of ten thousand men. This victory occasioned great joy in England; and sir Arthur Wellesley was honoured with a peerage, by the title of lord viscount Wellington.

After this battle, the enemy collected in great force, under marshals Ney, Soult, and Mortier, and the British army was obliged to retreat into Portugal. In the other districts of Spain, the French arms were triumphant; and, at the close of the campaign, the principal armies of the patriots had been successively defeated and dispersed.

The island of Martinico was taken by the English; and lord Cochrane destroyed or rendered unserviceable ten French ships in Basque roads.

War being again declared between Austria

France, the hostile armies were put in motion; and battles were fought at Abensberg, at Eckmühl, and at Ratisben all in favour of the French. In the battle of Asperne, however, Bonaparte was unsuccessful against the archduke Charles; but at Wagram, a short time after, he obtained a decisive victory over the Austrians, and compelled the emperor again to sue for peace, which he granted.

An expedition was fitted out for making a descent on the Dutch island of Zealand; and an armament, consisting of a military force of nearly forty thousand men, under the command of the earl of Chatham, and a fleet of thirty-nine sail of the line, and thirty-six frigates, under the direction of sir Richard Strachan, sailed from England. After a vigorous siege, Flushing was compelled to surrender; but the ulterior objects of this expedition completely failed; and the occupation of the low and marshy islands of Walcherin and South Beveland proved greatly destructive to the troops, who were seized with a pestilential fever.

The reduction of Zante, and the consequent surrender of the Ionian islands, effected by the joint efforts of lord Collingwood and sir John Stuart, may be reckoned among the more fortunate events of this year.

A partial change of administration took place, in consequence of the resignations of lord Castlereagh, Mr. Canning and the duke of Portland. Mr. Perceval united in his own person the offices of first lord of the treasury, and chancellor of the exchequer; the marquis Wellesley was appointed secretary for foreign affairs; and lord Liverpool secretary at war.

The next session of parliament commenced with violent debates on the disastrous expedition to Walcherin; and lord Chatham thought proper to resign
1810] his office of master general of the ordnance.

In Spain, the cause of independence was still unsuccessful; but Caliz, which had become the seat of government, being protected by a combined British and Spanish fleet, and occupied by a considerable military force, bade defiance to any attack of the enemy.

Ciudad Rodrigo and Almeida fell successively into the hands of the French. At Buzaco, however, the English obtained a victory, but afterwards retired to

GEORGE III.

the strong lines of Torres Vedras; and Marshal Massena, the French general, fixed his head quarters at Santarem.

Napoleon divorced the empress Josephine, and married the archduchess Maria Louisa, daughter to the emperor of Austria. Europe beheld with astonishment this alliance, which was not less disgraceful to the emperor Francis, than injurious in France to the popularity of Bonaparte.

The sovereignty of Holland was resigned by Louis; and the Seven United States were annexed to the French empire. In Sweden, the states elected the French marshal Bernadotte crown-prince of that country.

In the West Indies, the English took the island of Guadaloupe; and in the Indian Ocean, the French islands of Bourbon and the Mauritius. They also took Amboyna from the Dutch.

In consequence of the return of the king's malady, 1811] the prince of Wales was appointed regent, subject to all the restrictions which, on a former occasion, had been proposed by Mr. Pitt. On the 6th of February, his royal highness was installed as regent; and he declared his intention not to remove from their stations those whom he found his majesty's official servants, lest any act of his might interfere with his royal father's recovery.

The commercial distress of the nation necessarily demanded the attention of parliament; and a bill was passed, empowering the treasury to issue exchequer bills to the amount of six millions sterling, the same to be reimbursed in three quarterly instalments; but the effects of this bill were less beneficial than had been expected. The legislature also passed a bill, for preventing the current gold coin from being paid for a greater value than its current value, for preventing bank of England notes from being received at a value inferior to that which they represented, and for staying proceedings in any distress by the tender of such notes.

The difficulty of obtaining the necessary supplies of provisions in a desolated country, and at such a distance from his resources, compelled Massena his strong camp at Santarem. He was cl

used by lord Wellington, who found means to force part of his army into occasional actions, in which great numbers of the French were killed or taken prisoners. In order to relieve Almeida, which lord Wellington had invested, Massena attacked the British army, but was repulsed, and obliged to retire to Salamanca.

Lieutenant general Graham defeated the French at Barosa, where the enemy lost an eagle, six pieces of cannon, and upwards of three thousand men, in killed, wounded and prisoners. Marshal Beresford, who was investing Badajoz, which the Spanish governor had pusillanimously surrendered to the enemy, defeated the French under marshal Soult, in the battle of Albuera, in which the enemy lost about eight thousand men in killed and wounded.

In the east of Spain, the French arms were triumphant. Tarragona, reduced after an obstinate defence, suffered every cruelty which could be inflicted by the conquerors.

The Dutch island of Batavia, in the East Indies, surrendered to an English force under sir Samuel Auchmuty.

The affairs of Great Britain were now approaching to a crisis. The contest in Spain was still doubtful; a dispute existed with America, in regard to the orders in council, and threatened an open rupture with that country; and France was preparing, for the subjugation of Russia, which refused to comply with the treaty of Tilsit, by excluding the British from all
1812] commerce with the continent, a mightier armament than had ever been collected in Europe. At home, the decline of trade produced severe distress among the people; and a spirit of discontent and insubordination manifested itself in several of the manufacturing districts.

The parliament passed two bills, by one of which the crime of frame-breaking was made a capital offence; and by the other, additional powers were given to magistrates for a limited time, for the purpose of preserving the public peace in the disturbed counties.

On the 11th of May as Mr. Perceval was entering the lobby of the house of commons he was shot by a person of the name of Bellingham, and

died almost immediately. This man professed to have sustained injuries from the Russian government, which the British ministers being unable to redress, he determined to put one of them to death, that his case might be brought before a court of justice. The murderer made no attempt to palliate his crime, which he expiated with his life. Ample provision was made by parliament for the widow and children of Mr. Perceval; and men of all parties lamented his untimely fate, and bore testimony to his upright and amiable character.

After much delay, a new administration was formed, in which lord Liverpool was appointed first lord of the treasury, lord Sidmouth (formerly Mr. Addington) secretary of state for the home department, and Mr. Vansittart chancellor of the exchequer.

One of the first acts of the present government was a revocation of the orders in council, as far as regarded American property; but before intelligence of this repeal could be received in America, the United States had declared war against Great Britain. The republicans commenced hostilities by an irruption into upper Canada, but were defeated, and obliged to surrender to the British. For their disgraces by land, however, the Americans received some compensation by their successes at sea.

In the peninsular war, the French arms were triumphant in the east of Spain; but, in the west, they suffered great reverses. Ciudad Rodrigo and Badajoz fell into the hands of the allies; and so important did the capture of the former place appear to the Spaniards, that the Cortes conferred on lord Wellington the rank of a grandee, with the title of duke of Ciudad Rodrigo.

Marshal Marmont, who had assumed the command of the French army, was completely defeated by lord Wellington at Salamanca. This was the greatest victory that the English general had yet achieved, and sufficiently showed that the military talents of his lordship were superior to those of his adversary, who was one of the most distinguished of the French
 1812] shals. The effects of this victory were felt in
 ent parts of Spain. Astorga capitulat
 blockade of Cadiz was raised, Bilboa eva

and Seville recovered. Lord Wellington advanced, and laid siege to Burgos; but failing in his attempt to take it, and the French army, which had been reinforced, threatening the allies, his lordship retreated, and established his head-quarters at Freynada, on the Portuguese frontier. In admiration of his talents and achievements, the cortes invested him with the authority of commander-in-chief of the Spanish armies.

Napoleon's enterprise against Russia, which, in the boldness of its object, as well as the magnificent scale on which it was conducted, surpassed every expedition undertaken by any European power, threatened the conquest of that mighty empire. The French force employed in this undertaking, has been estimated [1812] at four hundred thousand effective men. On the 24th of June, Napoleon with his formidable army, passed the Niemen, and entered the Russian territory. The plan of his adversaries was, to resist the progress of the invader without risking a general engagement, to lay waste the country through which he should aim to penetrate, and to harass him as he advanced, and cut off his supplies. Bonaparte attacked the main Russian army at Smolensko, which the Russians despairing of retaining, they retreated; but the invaders, on their entrance, found the city burning and in ruins. The conqueror now hastened towards Moscow, of which, after the sanguinary battle of Borodino, he obtained possession.

On the entrance of the French emperor into that devoted place, which the invaders had fondly hoped would have afforded some repose for their toils, the city was found on fire; and a violent wind arising soon after, the conflagration became general, and the whole extent of that ancient capital, for many miles, appeared like a sea of flame. Two thirds of the city were destroyed.

Napoleon was now in the greatest difficulty. His stores were exhausted, and his supplies intercepted by the Russian armies; and his soldiers, dispirited and discontented, were enfeebled by the fatigue and distress to which they had been exposed. A retreat was now inevitable. The horrors of this retreat, or rather flight, exceed the powers of description. The route of the army might be traced, in many places, by

the dead bodies of those who perished from cold, hunger, or fatigue ; and of the numerous hosts that composed the invading army, not more than fifty thousand men recrossed the Russian boundary.

The new parliament of Great Britain and Ireland assembled under happier auspices than the most sanguine politician could have ventured to anticipate. The session was opened by the prince regent, who expressed his firm reliance on the determination of parliament to continue every aid in support of a contest, which had first given to the continent of Europe the example of persevering and successful resistance to the power of France. A grant of one hundred thousand pounds was voted to lord Wellington, and another of two hundred thousand pounds for the relief of the sufferers in Russia. A bill was passed, by which the East India Company was to continue in possession of all its former territories in India, with the later acquisitions, continental and insular, to the north of the equator, for the further term of twenty years from the 20th of April, 1814. The exclusive right of a commercial intercourse with China, and of the trade in tea, was preserved to the company ; but his majesty's subjects in general were permitted to trade to and from all ports within the limits of the company's charter, under certain provisions.

One of the first effects of the late Russian campaign, 1813] was to rouse the other powers of Europe from their state of subjection to the dominion of France. Prussia united her arms to those of Russia ; and Austria did not long delay to follow the example. Sweden, subsidised by Great Britain, joined the allies. The battle of Leipsic was completely decisive against the French, and the Dutch availing themselves of this opportunity of throwing off the galling yoke of France, recalled from his long exile the prince of Orange, who entered the Hague amidst the acclamations of the people. The influence of Bonaparte in Germany, was now nearly annihilated ; and the complete deliverance of Europe from the yoke of France seemed no longer doubtful.

The disasters of their countrymen in Germany paralyzed the efforts of the French in Spain. The activity of lord Wellington prevented the

securing the line of the Douro; and at Vittoria, he completely defeated the French, commanded by Joseph Bonaparte, under whom marshal Jourdan acted as major-general. After suffering this defeat, the French retired by Pampeluna, and pursued their retreat over the Pyrennees into France. Joseph Bonaparte fled in confusion, and thus terminated his possession of the Spanish monarchy.

In the east of Spain, the success of the allies was less flattering; and sir John Murray, who had landed an army of fifteen thousand men from Sicily, attempted the siege of Tarragona; but, though the town had been partly dismantled, and was feebly garrisoned, the British general, on the report of Suchet's approach from Valencia, hastily abandoned the siege, and left his cannon in the batteries.

Early in January, the allied armies in Germany passed the Rhine and entered France at different points. For some time, Napoleon appeared irresolute; but when the invaders had reached Champagne, 1814] he became convinced of the necessity of acting with vigour. At Brienne, he attacked marshal Blucher, whom he compelled to retreat: but at La Rothiere, he was obliged to retire in his turn. The allies now advanced to Troyes, which was entered by the prince of Wurtemberg; Chalons on the Marne was evacuated by Macdonald; and Chalons on the Saone was taken by the Austrians. Bonaparte, on the verge of ruin, made the most surprising and energetic efforts for his recovery. Unable to oppose an adequate resistance to the allied armies in every quarter, he determined to concentrate his forces, and, by bearing vigorously on particular points, to aim at destroying their communication with each other. In pursuance of this plan, he attacked the Prussian army under Blucher, and compelled him to retreat to Chalons on the Marne. He next directed his attention to prince Schwartzberg, who had been advancing on Paris, by way of the Seine, and forced him to retire.

During these transactions, negotiations for peace were carried on at Chatillon. The British envoys were the earl of Aberdeen and lord Cathcart, under the direction of lord Castlereagh; Caulaincourt was representative of Napoleon; and plenipotentiaries

were also appointed by the Russian, Austrian, and Prussian courts. The ultimatum of Bonaparte, however, to maintain the integrity of the French empire, were deemed inconsistent with the balance of power in Europe, and on that account the conferences terminated.

In the mean time, the marquis of Wellington, after crossing the Bidassoa, gradually proceeded in the south of France. His army forced the passage of the Gave de Pau at Orthes, and next day crossed the Adour. A division under marshal Beresford entered Bordeaux, which declared for the Bourbons, and the chief inhabitants welcomed the British troops as deliverers. Soult was defeated by the marquis of Wellington at Tarbes, and afterwards at Toulouse.

The allied armies in the north of France continued to advance, and, notwithstanding the extraordinary exertions and abilities displayed by Napoleon, they succeeded, by a convention entered into with marshal Marmont, in obtaining possession of the city of Paris. A special senate appointed a provisional government, which declared, that Napoleon Bonaparte had violated the compact which united him to the French people, and had thereby forfeited his right to the throne of France.

Under these circumstances, on the 4th of April a treaty was concluded at Fontainbleau, by which Bonaparte, on certain conditions, abdicated, for himself and his heirs, the thrones of France and Italy. The 1814] isle of Elba was to be possessed by him in full sovereignty, and an annual revenue of two millions of francs, charged on the great book of France; and to his consort, Maria Louisa, were assigned the Dutchies of Parma, Placentia, and Guastalla. On the 20th of the same month, Napoleon began his journey to the isle of Elba, accompanied by four commissioners from the allied powers.

Louis XVIII. embarked at Dover, and was joyfully welcomed at Calais; but in the capital, the acclamations of the loyal people produced no response from the soldiery. One of the first acts of Louis was to issue a declaration forming the basis of the constitutional charter, by which the liberties of the nation were to be secured.

Peace was concluded between France and the allied powers, Austria, Russia, Great Britain, and Prussia. By this treaty, the continental dominions of France were, generally speaking, restricted to the limits which bounded them on the 1st of January, 1792. Her colonies, with a few exceptions, were restored. England retained Malta, the Cape of Good Hope, and the small island of Heligoland, besides some islands in the East and West Indies.

In the beginning of June, the emperor of Russia and the king of Prussia visited England, attended by marshal Blucher, the hetman Platoff, and other distinguished officers. The visit of these illustrious strangers was celebrated in London, and other parts of the kingdom with extraordinary rejoicing and festivity.

The duke of Wellington's return was hailed with no less joy than the arrival of the allied sovereigns. On taking his seat for the first time in the house of lords, his various patents of honour, as baron, viscount, earl, marquis, and duke, were successively recited; and the thanks of the house, which had been voted the evening before, were addressed to him by the lord chancellor. To support these high honours, the sum of three hundred thousand pounds was voted for the purchase of a palace and domain suitable to his dignity. Proportionate honours and emoluments were assigned to his gallant companions in arms; and generals Graham, Hill, and Beresford, were raised to the peerage.

While peace was thus happily restored to Europe, the war between Great Britain and the United States of America still raged with much animosity, devastation, and bloodshed. At length, however, on the 24th 1814] of December, a treaty of pacification was effected between the two countries at Ghent; and for the first time, after the period of a quarter of a century, with the exception of the feverish truce of Amiens, a general peace prevailed in both hemispheres, and for the present the temple of Janus was closed.

The return of Bonaparte from Elba created a strong feeling throughout Europe. This extraordinary man landed in the south of France, with a few followers, on the 1st of March, and was every where received

1815] with extravagant joy. On the 20th of the same month, Louis XVIII. fled from Paris, and on the evening of the same day, Napoleon entered that capital, and resumed the government.

His first attempt was to conciliate the allies, to whom he proposed to maintain the peace which had been concluded with Louis at Paris; but the allies rejected the proposition, and began immediately to put their armies in motion, with the avowed design of once more displacing him, and restoring the Bourbons. The English and Prussians were first assembled in the Netherlands under Wellington and Blücher; and Napoleon, at the head of 150,000 men, advanced against them, on the 12th of June. At Charleroi, he encountered the Prussians, who, after great loss, retreated upon Wavre, where they were followed by the French right wing under Grouchy. On the next day, the left division of the French army had a severe conflict with the English and Dutch at Quatre Bras, after which the British division retreated to Waterloo, where, meeting with reinforcements, was fought one June 18, 1815, of the severest engagements recorded in history. The French made the attack about noon, and persevered with great fury during the whole day. About four in the afternoon, a Prussian army, under Bulow, arrived on the field, and assisted in checking the impetuosity of the French; at seven o'clock, the remainder of the Prussians under Blücher arrived from Wavre; and assailing the French on their rear to the right, a general confusion in their army took place, and at nine o'clock they fled in disorder towards Charleroi, leaving 30,000 killed and wounded, and all their cannon and materials of war in the hands of the victors.

The Prussians continued the pursuit throughout the night. On the side of the allies, the total of killed and wounded was not inferior to that of the French, and among them were many officers of distinction, who had acquired great celebrity during the previous wars.

The English and Prussian armies now advanced rapidly into France, and invested Paris, and in a few days the French provisional government entered into a convention. Louis XVIII., who in the interim had

resided at Ghent, at the same time entered his capital; and though there was still a considerable French force in the field and in garrisons, it was reduced to submission in a short time by the armies of Austria and Russia, which had also penetrated France.

Meanwhile Bonaparte, who, after abdicating at Paris in favour of his son, had proceeded to Rochfort for the purpose of embarking for America, finding it impracticable to elude the vigilance of the British cruisers, went voluntarily on board a British man-of-war, which immediately sailed for Torbay. The decision of the British government, in concert with the allies, was, that he should be conveyed to the island of St. Helena, in the southern Atlantic, there to reside as a state prisoner, under the inspection of commissioners appointed by each of the confederate powers.

By the arrangements of the congress, to which lord Castlereagh was deputed on the part of the English government, the seven Ionian islands were placed under the protection of Great Britain; to whose sovereign was also confirmed the title of king of Hanover.

While these important events were passing in Europe, the arms of Britain had achieved some valuable conquests in Asia. A dispute had arisen between the East-India Company and the Nepaulese, concerning their boundaries; and the Nepaulese, who were a brave and hardy race, endeavoured to force their pretensions by the sword; but they were overcome by the British troops, directed by the marquis of Hastings, and the whole tract of territory in dispute was ceded to the East-India Company.

An important revolution took place at this time in Ceylon. The king of Candy, who possessed the interior of the island, having alienated the hearts of his subjects by a series of cruelties, and provoked the hostility of his powerful neighbours, was dethroned, and his family excluded from the crown. A treaty was signed in a solemn assembly of adikars and other chiefs of the provinces, by which the dominion of the Candian empire was vested in the king of Great Britain, with a reservation to those chiefs of their rights and immunities.

An event, which gave universal satisfaction, was the marriage of the princess Charlotte of Wales, pre-

1816] sumptive heiress to the British throne, to the prince Leopold of Saxe-Cobourg. A naval expedition was this year undertaken against Algiers, which had refused to abolish Christian slavery. The dey commenced hostilities by the seizure and imprisonment of the British vice-consul, and by a most horrible massacre of Christians engaged in the coral fishery at Bona. Lord Exmouth attacked Algiers with a formidable armament; and the dey, after a tremendous conflict, was compelled to accede to the terms of the English admiral.

In England, great distress prevailed, particularly in the manufacturing districts, in which the people suffered from a depreciation of wages, consequent on an almost total stagnation of trade. The public mind was agitated by rumours of plots and conspiracies; and at Derby, a number of persons were tried for high treason, and three of them being found guilty, underwent the dreadful sentence of the law.

The hopes founded on the happy union of the prince
1817] regent's only daughter with the prince of Cobourg, were fatally blighted on the 6th of November, by the death of that amiable princess, at a short period after her delivery of a still-born male infant, to the unspeakable grief of the royal family, and the general sorrow of the whole nation.

After a long and severe illness, queen Charlotte, consort of George III., died on the 17th of November. In consequence of her death, the duke of York was
1818] appointed guardian of the king's person; with a salary of ten thousand pounds a year.

The spirit of discontent, which had already appeared in the manufacturing districts, now became alarming. A meeting of the people was held at Manchester, on the 16th of August, for the purpose of petitioning for a reform in parliament, to the number of 60,000,
1819] carrying various banners. Mr. Hunt, the chairman, and some others, were arrested on the hustings, and a party of yeomanry cavalry beginning to strike down the banners, a scene of dreadful confusion arose; numbers were trampled under the feet of men and horses; many persons, even females, were cut down by sabres; some were killed, and between three and four hundred were wounded and

mained. The interference of an armed yeomanry for the prevention rather than for the suppression of riot, produced a strong sensation throughout the country; and addresses on this unfortunate affair were prepared in the principal cities and towns in the kingdom.

At the close of the year, it was announced, that the bodily health of the king had partaken of some of the infirmities of age; and on Saturday, the 29th of January, at thirty-five minutes past eight in the evening, his majesty expired without a struggle, in the eighty-second year of his age. Thus terminated, in its sixtieth year, the reign of George the Third, a sovereign who deserved to be emphatically styled the father of his people. Their loyalty and affection were always considered by him as the best and most permanent security of his throne; and by his own example, he promoted among them the practice of those duties which alone could enable them to enjoy the blessings of civil and religious liberty, as guaranteed by the constitution. His habitual piety, and constant trust in Providence, greatly strengthened the natural courage and firmness which he possessed, and for which, on occasions of personal danger, he was so eminently distinguished. If, in matters of state policy, he sometimes evinced a tenaciousness of purpose, which seemed to border on obstinacy, this must be attributed to his strong sense of the obligations under which he considered himself bound, in discharge of the important trust committed to him. He was punctually assiduous in the exercise of his royal functions, and exemplary in the fulfilment of all the social duties. Temperance and exercise secured to him for a long period the enjoyment of uninterrupted health. The English sceptre may have been swayed by sovereigns endowed with more splendid qualities than those of George the Third; but it may be greatly doubted whether any of his predecessors, since Edward the Sixth, has borne his faculties so meekly, or been "so clear in his great office."

CHAPTER XI.

The Reign of George IV.

On the death of the late king, his eldest son, George prince of Wales, who, since the beginning of 1811, had acted as regent of the united kingdom, ascended the throne; and, on the 31st of January, George the 1820] Fourth was publicly proclaimed. For nine years he had governed the kingdom; and, during that time, the period had been irradiated with military renown. No sovereign, ancient or modern, can perhaps display, within so short a time, such a series of events as occurred during the exercise of the royal functions by the prince regent. When he took the reins of government, the situation of Europe was adverse to the policy of Great Britain, and prospects were by no means cheering. The power of Napoleon seemed strongly consolidated by the subjugation of the continent; but scarcely was unrestricted authority given to the prince, than Napoleon undertook his gigantic and disastrous expedition into Russia, which led to corresponding reverses in Spain, and by successive victories of the British and Spanish armies.

About this time several obscure individuals, at the head of whom was Arthur Thistlewood, entered into a conspiracy to assassinate the king's ministers at a cabinet dinner, and for this purpose they met in a stable loft in Cato-street; but the plot having been revealed to the privy-council by one who had been associated with them, for the purpose of betraying their designs, they were apprehended, and five of them were convicted and executed.

The unhappy differences that existed between the present sovereign and his royal consort, have been noticed in the preceding reign. In 1814, her royal highness embarked at Worthing, and after paying a visit to her brother at the court of Brunswick, she proceeded to Italy, every where receiving the honours due to her rank. On the approach of winter, she fixed her residence at Naples. She afterwards travelled through various parts of the continent, visited Jerusalem and other towns of Palestine, as well as different places in the Mediterranean.

On the accession of the present king, in consequence of the manner in which she had conducted herself after leaving England, her majesty's name was erased out of the liturgy; and she was informed, that if she returned to this country, judicial proceedings would be instituted against her; but if she would consent to live abroad, the sum of fifty thousand pounds a year would be allowed her. No sooner, however, was this proposition made to her, than the queen immediately proceeded to Calais, accompanied by lady Anne Hamilton and Mr. Alderman Wood; and embarking on board a packet boat which lay in the harbour, she sailed for England, and on the 5th of June landed at Dover, where she was greeted by acclamations of the populace.

On the day of her majesty's arrival in London, the king sent a message to parliament, requesting that an inquiry into the queen's conduct might be instituted, and that certain papers containing the evidence which had been collected at Milan, might be examined. On this evidence, it was intended to found a bill of pains and penalties against the queen. After much discussion, a secret committee of the house of lords was appointed to examine the documents; and it was finally determined, that her majesty should be tried by the peers of the realm.

During the queen's trial, which continued for forty-
1820] five days, the public mind was violently agitated, and the spirit of party extreme. It was urged against the queen, that she had raised a favourite Italian in her employment from a menial station to one of rank and honour; that she had permitted him to take familiarities with her; that, having instituted a new order of knighthood, called "the order of St. Caroline," she had decorated him with its insignia; and that she had otherwise demeaned herself in a manner unbecoming the character and conduct of a British princess. A very small majority of the lords having declared her guilty, the bill was, on the 10th of November, formally withdrawn.

This year, revolutions took place both in Spain and Portugal, with little or no bloodshed; and the despotic governments in the peninsula were changed for others of a more popular form

Napoleon, the ex-emperor of France, died on the 5th of May, in the island of St. Helena, where he had been detained a close prisoner since his surrender in 1815 to the English government.

On the 19th of July, the ceremony of the coronation of George the Fourth took place in Westminster abbey. The greatest preparations had been made to celebrate it with becoming splendour; and London never before contained such an assemblage of rank and fashion. This national ceremony was conducted with a magnificence never equalled on any former occasion, and with a degree of order and decorum highly creditable to those by whom the management was superintended.

The reader has, therefore, been conducted in this volume through a period of nearly TWO THOUSAND YEARS. He found these islands inhabited by tribes of NAKED SAVAGES, and leaves them in possession of the most CIVILIZED PEOPLE on earth, renowned in ARTS, ARMS, COMMERCE, and AGRICULTURE.

He has seen them a prey to ROMAN AMBITION; while, during the last war, Rome itself was captured and occupied even by a small division of British troops! He has beheld them without ships to oppose the invasions of the Romans, the Saxons, the Danes, and the Normans, and he now finds them GREAT ON EVERY OCEAN; and their commercial shipping covering all seas under the protection of a flag every where RESPECTED.

He found their rude population governed by CHIEFS of SMALL TRIBES OR CLANS, and has beheld these extended to SEVEN kingdoms in England, TWO in Wales, ONE in Scotland, and THREE in Ireland; till, after successive contests of power and patriotism, the whole have been united under ONE SOVEREIGN, whose dominion reaches through numerous colonies to every clime in the four quarters of the world.

He was first introduced to such people as now inhabit THE WOODS of America, in a country equally covered with woods, and LIVING IN HUTS and CAVERNS; but in 1820, he finds a country of MATCHLESS CULTIVATION, abounding in all social improvements, affording examples to other nations of the ARTS of LIFE, and filled with SPLENDID CITIES, PALACES,

PUBLIC EDIFICES. He finds **PASTURES** in places of **FORESTS**, enclosed **CORN FIELDS**, once **BARREN HEATHS**, and **ROADS** and **CANALS** uniting that country, as one whole, which, in the commencement of this History, was in every direction impassable.

In place, too, of the arbitrary will of the **STRONGEST**, and the **LAW** of the **MOST DARING**, he has traced the gradual development of a system of equal **JUSTICE**, and the heroic conquest of mind over brutal strength in the firm establishment of a **POLITICAL CONSTITUTION**, which, when equally balanced in its three estates, will merit the admiration of the world, and the gratitude of the people who are its fortunate subjects.

Above all he has seen the **DARKEST SUPERSTITIONS** of savage life yield successively to the **LIGHTS** of **CHRISTIANITY**—and the abuses of the Romish Church corrected by a **REFORMED ESTABLISHMENT**, which, tolerating every variety of opinion, enables all to enjoy perfect freedom of conscience, and corresponding modes of worship.

During this glorious career of humanity, the destinies of the nation have been directed by branches of **THE SAME FAMILY**. From **HENGIST**, who married the daughter of **VORTIGERN**, we trace this family to **EDMOND IRONSIDE**; and from him, amid various struggles of virtue and vice, through the **NORMAN**, **PLANTAGENET**, **TUDOR**, and **STUART** families, down to the reigning House of **GUELPH** in the person of **GEORGE THE FOURTH**.

THE END.

APPENDIX.

SUCCESSION OF SOVEREIGNS.

THE SAXON HEPTARCHY.

The kingdom of Kent contained only the county of Kent ; its kings were,

1 Hengist, began 454	10 Edrick 684
2 Eske 488	11 Withdred 685
3 Octa 512	12 { Eadburt and } 725
4 Ymbrick 534	{ Edelbert }
5 Ethelbert 568	13 Ethelbert alone 743
6 Edbald 616	14 Aldric 760
7 Ercombert 640	15 Ethelbert Pren 794
8 Egbert 664	16 Cudred 799
9 Lothaire 673	17 Bardred 805

This kingdom began 454, ended 823. Its first Christian king was Ethelbert.

The kingdom of South Saxons contained the counties of Sussex and Surrey ; its kings were,

1 Ella, began 491	6 { Cinigeil } 611
2 Cissa 514	{ Quicelm }
3 Cheveljn 590	7 Canowalch 643
4 Ceolwic 592	8 Adelwach 648
5 Ceoluph 597	

This kingdom began 491, ended 685. Its first Christian king was Adelwach.

The kingdom of East Saxons contained the counties of Essex and Middlesex ; its kings were,

1 Erchenwin, began 597	5 Sigebor. the Little 653
2 Blodda 587	6 Sigebert the Good 658
3 Seburt 598	7 Swithelme 655
4 { Særed } 616	8 Sighere and Sebbi 665
{ Seward }	9 Sebbi 669
{ Sigebert }	

10	{ Sigberd and } { Seofrid }	694	12 Ceolfred	700
11	Offa	700	13 Saithred	748
			14 Sigered	790

This kingdom began 527, ended 827. Its first Christian king was Sebert.

The kingdom of Northumberland contained Yorkshire, Durham, Lancashire, Westmoreland, Cumberland, and Northumberland; its kings were,

1	Elle, or Ida, began	547	17 Ceured	716
2	Adda	559	18 Osrick	718
3	Clappa	566	19 Ceolulph	730
4	Theodwald	572	20 Egbert	737
5	Fridulph	573	21 Osawulph	758
6	Theodorick	579	22 Edilwald	759
7	Athelrick	586	23 Alured	765
8	Athelfrid	593	24 Atholdred	774
9	Edwin	617	25 Alswald I.	779
10	Osric	633	26 Osred II.	789
11	Oswald	634	27 Ethelred restored	790
12	Oswy	643	28 Osbald	796
13	Ethelward	653	29 Ardulph	797
14	Egfrid	670	30 Alswald II.	807
15	Alkfyrd	685	31 Andred	810
16	Osred I.	705		

This kingdom began 547, ended 827. Its first Christian king was Edwin.

The kingdom of Mercia contained the counties of Huntingdon, Rutland, Lincoln, Northampton, Leicester, Derby, Nottingham, Oxford, Chester, Salop, Gloucester, Worcester, Stafford, Warwick, Buckingham, Bedford, and Hertford. Its kings were,

1	Creda, began	585	10 Ethelbald	716
2	Wibba	595	11 Offa	757
3	Ceorlas	616	12 Egfrid	794
4	Penda	625	13 Cenolf	795
5	Peada	656	14 Kenelme	819
6	Wulfhere	659	15 Ceolwulf	819
7	Ethelred	675	16 Burnulf	821
8	Kenred	704	17 Ludecan	823
9	Ceolred	709	18 Wiglafa	826

This kingdom began 582, ended 827. Its first Christian king was Peada.

The kingdom of East Angles contained the counties of Suffolk, Norfolk, Cambridge, and the isle of Ely; its kings were,

1	Uffa, began	575	3 Redwald	599
2	Titillus	578	4 Erpenwald	694

6 Sigebert	636	10 Alswald	683
6 { Egrik }	644	11 { Beorna and }	749
6 { Annas }		11 { Ethelbert }	
7 Ethelbert	654	12 Beorna alone	758
8 Ethwald	659	13 Ethelred	761
9 Adwulf	664	14 Ethelbert	790

This kingdom began 575, ended 792. Its first Christian king was Redwald.

The kingdom of West Saxons contained the counties of Cornwall, Devon, Dorset, Somerset, Wilts, Hants, and Berks: its kings were,

1 Cherdic, began	519	10 { Censua, Escwin, }	674
2 Kenrick	534	10 { and Centwin }	
3 Chevline	560	11 Ceawald	686
4 Ceolric	592	12 Ina	688
5 Ceoluf	598	13 Adelard	726
6 { Kingills }	611	14 Cudred	740
6 { Quinthelein }		15 { Sigebert and }	754
7 Ceonwalch	643	15 { Cenulf }	
8 Adelwalch	648	16 Brithrick	784
9 Sexburga	672	17 Egbert	800

This kingdom began 519, ended 828. Its first Christian king was Kingills.

The Saxons, though they were divided into seven kingdoms, were, for the most part, subject only to one monarch, who was styled king of the English nation; the most powerful giving the law unto the others, and succeeded as follows:

HENGIST, first monarch of Britain, landed in the Isle of Thanet, 449; laid the foundation of the monarchy in 455; defeated Vortimer at Crayford, in Jan. 457; massacred 300 British nobles on Salisbury plain, May 1, 474. He bore in his standard the white horse, blazoned in the same manner, as now borne by the dukes of Brunswick. He was born at Angria, in Westphalia, reigned 34 years, died in 484.

ELLA, second monarch, landed at Shoreham, in Sussex, in 477; assumed the title of king of the South Saxons, in 491; died in 499.

CHERDIC, third monarch, arrived in Britain, and overcame Arthur, near Chard, in Somersetshire, 519; began the kingdom of the West Saxons the same year; died in 534.

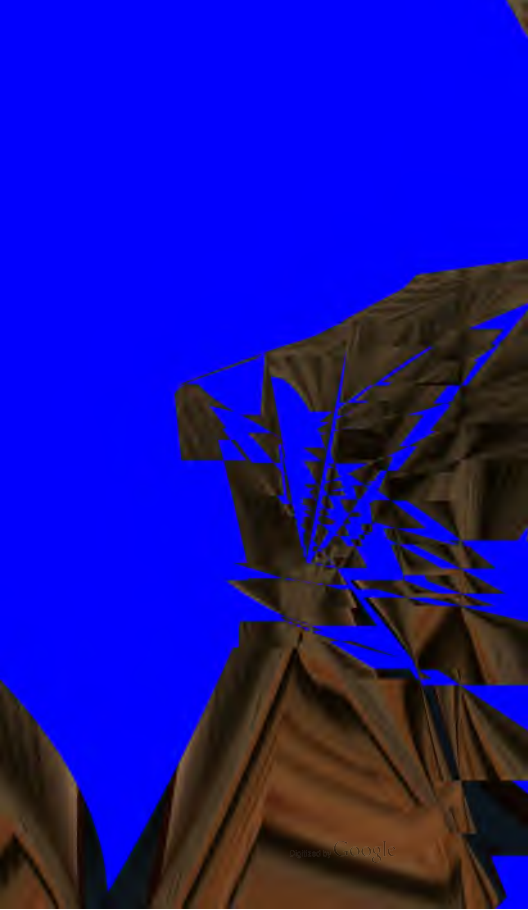
KENRICK, second king of the West Saxon

of new ceremon
gard to the ex
contented pur
England as re
Certain, howe
occasion, the
all pretensions

Charles is
though his
ings with his
ments; yet th
en him unwill
it presumption
time for the c
erally consid
not intend to
ery measure o
picion, so dis

Tonnage is
the royal auth
to various unc
by virtue of
contrary not
many instanc
eral feelings
star-chamber
ed, with all th
exercised again
dom, and wh
ernment beca
ter, having wr
in which he cr
dancing, but a
keeping, bonfir
star-chamber
and queen fre
sometimes act
resented at con
to lose both h
fine of five th
during life. Th
ritans; and it w
that sect, that h
ignominious pu





monarch, eldest son of Cherdic, succeeded in 534; and died in 560.

CHEVELINE, third king of the West Saxons, and fifth monarch, succeeded his father, 560; seized on Sussex in 590; abdicated in 591; and died, in banishment, in 592.

ETHELBERT I., fifth king of Kent, and sixth monarch, in 592; St. Augustine first arrived in his dominions, who, with his followers, were entertained by the king at Canterbury, where they settled; to whose doctrine Ethelbert became a convert. He gave Augustine an idol temple, without the walls of the city, as a burial place for him and his successors, which was converted into the first monastery. The king was the first that caused the laws of the land to be collected and translated into Saxon. He died Feb. 24, 617, and was buried at Canterbury.

REDWALD, third king of the East Angles, seventh monarch; 616; he died 624.

EDWIN the Great, king of Northumberland, succeeded as eighth monarch in 624. He was the first Christian, and the second king of Northumberland. He lost his life in a battle at Hatfield, Oct. 3, 633.

OSWALD, third king of Northumberland, and ninth monarch, in 634. He was slain at Maserfield, in Shropshire, Aug. 1, 642.

OSWY, fourth king of Northumberland, tenth monarch, on Oct. 13, 634. He defeated Penda, the Mercian, and Ethelred, king of the East Angles, Nov. 6, 655. He died Feb. 15, 670.

WOLFHERE, sixth king of the Mercians, eleventh monarch, in 670; died 674, and was buried at Peterborough.

ETHELRED, seventh king of Mercia, and twelfth monarch, in 675. He desolated part of Kent, and, in 677, destroyed Rochester, and many religious foundations; to atone for which he became a monk, 703, and died abbot of Bradney, in 716.

CENRED, his nephew, eighth king of Mercia, and thirteenth monarch, in 704, reigned four years, and following his uncle's example, became a monk.

CEOLRED, son to Ethelred; ninth king of the Mercians, and fourteenth monarch, in 709, was killed in battle with the West Saxons in 716; and was buried at Fitchfield.

ETHELBALD I., tenth king of the Mercians, fifteenth monarch, in 716; built Croyland abbey, in Lincolnshire. He was slain by his own subjects, when he was leading his troops against Cuthred, the West Saxon, at Secondine, three miles from Tamworth, in Warwickshire, and was buried at Repton, in Derbyshire; in 756.

OFFA, the eleventh king of the Mercians, and the sixteenth monarch, 757. He was born lame, deaf, and blind, which continued till he arrived at manhood. He took up arms against Kent, slew their king at Otteford, and conquered that kingdom. He caused a great trench to be dug from Bristol to Basingwerk, in Flintshire, as the boundary of the Britons, who harboured in Wales, 774. Offa first ordained the sounding of trumpets before the kings of England, to denote their appearance, and require respect. He admitted his son, Egfrýd, a partner in his sovereignty; and, out of devotion, paid a visit to Rome, where he made his kingdom subject to a tribute, then called Peter-pence, and procured the canonization of St. Alban. At his return he built St. Alban's monastery, in Hertfordshire, 793. He died at Offley, June 29, 794, and was buried at Bedford, in a chapel since swallowed up by the river Ouse.

EGFRYD, twelfth king of the Mercians, and seventeenth monarch, July 13, 794; but died Dec. 17 following, and was buried at St. Alban's.

CENOLE, thirteenth king of the Mercians, and eighteenth monarch, in 795. He conquered Kent, and gave that kingdom to Cudred, 798. He built Winchcomb monastery, in Gloucestershire, where he led the captive Prince, Pren, to the altar, and released him without ransom or entreaty. He died in 819, and was buried at Winchcomb.

EGBERT, seventeenth king of the West Saxons, and nineteenth, but first sole monarch, of the English. He conquered Kent, and laid the foundation of the sole monarchy in 823, which put an end to the Saxon Heptarchy, and was solemnly crowned at Winchester; when, by his edict, he ordered all the South of the island to be called England, 827. He died Feb. 4, 837, and was buried at Winchester.

ETHELWOLF, eldest son of Egbert, succeeded his father, notwithstanding, at the time of Egbert's death, he was bishop of Winchester. In 846 he ordained tithes to be collected, and exempted the clergy from regal tributes. He visited Rome in 847, confirming the grant of Peter-pence, and agreed to pay Rome 300 marks per annum. His son Ethelbald obliged him to divide the sovereignty with him, 856. He died Jan. 13, 857, and was buried at Winchester.

ETHELBALD II., eldest son of Ethelwolf, succeeded in 857. He died Dec. 20, 860, and was buried at Sherborn, but removed to Salisbury.

ETHELBERT II., second son of Ethelwolf, succeeded in 860, and was harassed greatly by the Danes, who were repulsed and vanquished. He died in 866, was buried at Sherborn, and was succeeded by

ETHELRED I., third son of Ethelwolf, in 866, when the Danes again harassed his kingdom. In 870, they destroyed the monasteries of Bradney, Crowland, Peterborough, Ely, and Huntingdon, when the nuns of Coldingham defaced themselves to avoid their pollution; and, in East Anglia, they murdered Edmund, at Edmundsbury in Suffolk. Ethelred overthrew the Danes, 871, at Assendon. He had nine set battles with the Danes in one year, and was wounded at Wittingham, which occasioned his death, April 27, 872, and was buried at Winborne in Dorsetshire.

ALFRED, the fourth son of Ethelwolf, succeeded in 872, in the 22d year of his age; was crowned at Winchester, and is distinguished by the title of Alfred the Great. He was born at Wantage, in Berkshire, 849, and obliged to take the field against the Danes within one month after his coronation, at Wilton, in Oxfordshire. He fought seven battles with them in 876. In 877 another succour of Danes arrived, and Alfred was obliged to disguise himself in the habit of a shepherd, in the isle of Alderney, in the county of Somerset, till, in 878, collecting his scattered friends, he attacked and defeated them in 879, when he obliged the greatest part of their army to quit the land; in 897 they went

up the river Lea, and built a fortress at Ware, where king Alfred turned off the course of the river, and left their ships dry, which obliged the Danes to remove. He died Oct. 28, 901.

EDWARD the Elder, his son, succeeded him, and was crowned at Kingston-upon-Thames, in 901. In 911, Leolin, prince of Wales, did homage to Edward for his principality. He died at Farringdon, in Berkshire, in 924, and was buried at Winchester.

ATHELSTAN, his eldest son, succeeded him, and was crowned with far greater magnificence than usual, at Kingston-upon-Thames, in 929. In 937 he defeated two Welsh princes, but soon after, on their making submission, he restored them their estates. He escaped being assassinated in his tent, 938, which he revenged by attacking his enemy, when five petty sovereigns, twelve dukes, and an army who came to the assistance of Analf, king of Ireland, were slain; which battle was fought near Dunbar, in Scotland. He made the princes of Wales tributary, 939; and died Oct. 17, 940, at Gloucester.

EDMUND I., the fifth son of Edward the Elder, succeeded at the age of 18, and was crowned king at Kingston-upon-Thames, 940. On May 26, 947, in endeavouring to part two who were quarrelling, he received a wound, of which he bled to death, and was buried at Glastonbury.

EDRED, his brother, aged 28, succeeded in 947, and was crowned at Kingston-upon-Thames, the 17th of August. He died in 955, and was buried at Winchester.

EDWY, the eldest son of Edmund, succeeded, and was crowned at Kingston-upon-Thames, in 955. He had great dissensions with the clergy, and banished Dunstan, their ringleader, which occasions little credit to be given to the character the priests give him. He died of grief in 959, after a turbulent reign of four years, and was buried at Winchester.

EDGAR, at the age of 16, succeeded his brother, and was crowned at Kingston-upon-Thames, in 959, and again at Bath, 972. He imposed upon the princes of Wales a tribute of wolves' heads, that for three years amounted to 300 each year. He obliged eight

tributary princes to row him in a barge on the river Dee, in 974. He died July 1, 975, and was buried at Glastonbury.

EDWARD the Martyr, his eldest son, succeeded him, being but 16 years of age; was crowned by Dunstan at Kingston-upon-Thames, in 975. He was stabbed by the instructions of his mother-in-law, as he was drinking at Corfe-castle, in the isle of Purbeck, in Dorsetshire, on March 18, 979. He was first buried at Wareham, without any ceremony, but removed three years after, in great pomp to Shaftesbury.

ETHELRED II. succeeded his half-brother, and was crowned at Kingston-upon-Thames, on April 14, 979. In 982, his palace, with great part of London, was destroyed by a great fire. England was ravaged by the Danes, who, in 999, received at one payment about 16,000*l.* raised by a land-tax called Danegelt. A general massacre of the Danes, on Nov. 13, 1002. Swein revenged his countrymen's deaths, 1003, and did not quit the kingdom till Ethelred had paid him 36,000*l.* which he the year following demanded as an annual tribute. In the spring of 1008 they subdued great part of the kingdom. To stop their progress, it was agreed to pay the Danes 48,000*l.* to quit the kingdom, 1012. In the space of twenty years they had 469,687*l.* sterling. Soon after Swein entered the Humber again, when Ethelred retired to the Isle of Wight, and sent his sons, with their mother Emma, into Normandy, to her brother, and Swein took possession of the whole kingdom, 1013.

SWEIN was proclaimed king of England in 1013, and no person disputed his title. His first act of sovereignty was an insupportable tax, which he did not live to see collected. He died Feb. 3, 1014, at Thetford. in Norfolk.

CANUTE, his son, was proclaimed March, 1014, and endeavoured to gain the affection of his English subjects, but without success, retired to Denmark, and

ETHELRED returned, at the invitation of his subjects. Canute returned, 1015, soon after he left England, and landed at Sandwich. Ethelred retired

to the north, but by evading a battle with the Danes, he lost the affections of his subjects, and retiring to London, he expired April 23, 1016.

EDMOND IRONSIDE, his son, was crowned at Kingston-upon-Thames, April, 1016; but by a disagreement among the nobility, Canute was likewise crowned at Southampton. In June following, Canute totally routed Edmund, at Assendon, in Essex, who soon after met Canute in the isle of Alderney, in the Severn, where a peace was concluded, and the kingdom divided between them. Edmund did not survive above a month after, being murdered at Oxford, Nov. 30, 1106, before he had reigned a year. He left two sons and two daughters; from one of which daughters James I. of England descended, and from him George IV.

CANUTE was established 1017; made an alliance with Normandy, and married Emma, Ethelred's widow, 1018; made a voyage to Denmark, attacked Norway, and took possession of the crown, 1028; died at Shaftesbury, 1036, and was buried at Winchester.

HAROLD I. his son, began his reign, 1036; died, April 14, 1039; and was succeeded by his younger brother.

HARDICANUTE, king of Denmark, who died at Lambeth, 1041; was buried at New Winchester, and succeeded by a son of queen Emma, by her first husband, Ethelred II.

EDWARD the Confessor, was born at Islip, in Oxfordshire, began his reign in the 40th year of his age. He was crowned at Winchester, 1042; married Editha, daughter of Godwin, earl of Kent 1043; remitted the tax of Danegelt, and was the first king of England that touched for the king's evil, 1058; died Jan. 5, 1066, aged 65; was buried in Westminster-abbey, which he rebuilt, where his bones were enshrined in gold set with jewels, 1206. Emma, his mother, died 1052. He was succeeded by

HAROLD II. son of the earl of Kent, who began in 1066; defeated by his brother Tosti and the king of Norway, who had invaded his dominions at Stamford, Sept. 25, 1066; but was killed by the Normans at Hastings, Oct. 14 following.

SOVEREIGNS FROM THE CONQUEST.

<i>Kings' Names.</i>	<i>Began their Reign.</i>	<i>Reign'd Y.M.D.</i>	<i>Days</i>	<i>Deaths.</i>	<i>Where buried.</i>		
<i>Norman Family.</i>							
W. Conq.	1066 Oct.	14	20	10 26	60	Burst leap.	Caen.
W. Rufus	1087 Sept.	9	12	10 24	43	Slain acci-	Winchester.
Henry . . 1	1100 Aug.	2	35	3 29	67	dentially.	Reading.
Stephen	1135 Dec.	1	18	10 24	49		Faversham
<i>The Saxon Line restored.</i>							
Henry . . 2	1154 Oct.	25	34	8 11	55		Fontevrault.
Richard . 1	1189 July	6	9	9 0	43	Slain with	Fontevrault.
John	1199 April	6	17	6 13	50	an arrow.	Worcester.
Henry . . 3	1216 Oct.	19	56	0 28	65		Westminster
Edward . 1	1272 Nov.	16	34	7 21	67		Westminster
Edward . 2	1307 July	7	19	6 18	43	Deposed &	Gloucester.
Edward . 3	1327 Jan.	25	50	4 27	65	murdered.	Westminster
Richard . 2	1377 June	21	22	3 8	33	Dep.& mur.	Westminster
<i>The Family of Lancaster.</i>							
Henry . . 4	1399 Sept.	29	13	5 20	46		Canterbury.
Henry . . 5	1413 Mar.	20	9	5 11	33		Westminster
Henry . . 6	1422 Aug.	31	38	6 4	49	Dep.& mur.	Windsor.
<i>The Family of York.</i>							
Edward . 4	1461 March	4	22	1 5	41		Windsor.
Edward . 5	1483 April	9	0	2 13	12	Smothered.	Tower.
Richard . 3	1483 June	22	2	2 0	42	Irr Battle.	Leicester.
<i>The Families United.</i>							
Henry . . 7	1485 Aug.	22	23	8 0	52		Westminster
Henry . . 8	1509 April	22	37	9 6	65		Windsor.
Edward . 6	1547 Jan.	28	6	5 8	15		Westminster
Q. Mary	1553 July	6	5	4 11	42		Westminster
-Elizabeth	1558 Nov.	17	44	4 7	69		Westminster
<i>House of Stuart</i>							
James . . 1	1603 Mar.	24	22	7 3	58		Westminster
Charles . 1	1625 Mar.	27	23	10 3	48	Beheaded.	Windsor.
Charles . 2	1649 Jan.	30	36	0 7	54		Westminster
James . . 2	1685 Feb.	6	4	0 7	67	Abdicated.	Paris.
Wm.&Ma.	1689 Feb.	13	13	0 23	32		Westminster
Q. Anne	1702 Mar.	8	12	4 24	49		Westminster
<i>House of Guelf.</i>							
George . 1	1714 Aug.	1	12	10 10	67		Hanover.
George . 2	1727 June	11	33	4 14	77		Westminster
George . 3	1760 Oct.	25	59	3 5	82		Windsor.
George . 4	1820 Jan.	31	Crowned July 19, 1821.				

II.

EMINENT AND REMARKABLE PERSONS WHO
HAVE FLOURISHED IN BRITAIN.

- ABERCROMBY**, sir Ralph, killed in Egypt, 1801.
Addison, Joseph, born 1672, died June 17, 1719.
Akenside, Dr. Mark, born 1721, died June 23, 1770.
Alban, St. the first English martyr, died 303.
Anson, admiral, died 1762, aged 62.
Arkwright, sir Richard, inventor of the spinning jennies, died Aug. 3, 1792.
Arne, Michael, the musician, died 1785.
Bacon, Roger, born 1214, died 1294.
 ———Francis, lord Verulam, sent to the tower, 1622; died, April 9, 1626, aged 57.
Becket, Thomas, chancellor to Henry II. 1157; made archbishop of Canterbury, 1162; murdered in the cathedral church at Canterbury, Dec. 29, 1170.
Berkeley, bishop of Cloyne, died 1753, aged 73.
Bernard, sir John, died 1764, aged 80.
Blackstone, Judge, born 1723, died Feb. 14, 1780.
Blair, Dr. Hugh, died Dec. 27, 1800, aged 83.
Blake, admiral, born 1589, died 1657.
Bolingbroke, lord, died 1751, aged 73.
Boulton, Matthew, the machinist, born 1728, died Sept. 1809.
Boyle, Robert, the philosopher, died 1691, aged 65.
Bruce, Robert, Scottish general and king, died 1329.
Buckingham, duke of, killed at Portsmouth by Felton, Aug. 23, 1628, aged 35.
Bunyan, John, born 1628, died 1688.
Burke, Edmund, died July 8, 1797, aged 68.
Burleigh, lord Exeter, 1560, died 1598.
Burnet, bishop of Sarum, born 1643, died 1715.
Butler, Samuel, author of Hudibras, born 1612, died 1690.
Camden, the historian, died Nov. 2, 1623, aged 72.
Caxton, William, the first printer in England, 1474, died 1491, aged 70.
Chaucer, Geoffry, born 1328, died 1409.
Chicheley, Henry, archbishop of Canterbury, died 1443.
Churchill, Rev. Charles, born 1731, died 1764.

Clarendon, Hyde, earl of, born 1612; banished Dec. 12, 1667; died Dec. 7, 1674.

Clarke, Rev. Dr. Samuel, born 1675, died May 17, 1729.

Coke, lord chief justice, born 1549, died 1634.

Congreve, William, born 1672, died 1729.

Cook, captain James, the navigator, born Oct. 27, 1728; killed Feb. 14, 1779.

Cornwallis, marquis K. G. born 1738, died in India, 1805.

Cowley, Abraham, born 1618, died 1667.

Cowper, William, poet, died 1800.

Cranmer, archbishop of Canterbury, born 1489. burnt at Oxford, March 21, 1556.

Cromwell, lord, beheaded July 28, 1540.

Defoe, Daniel, political writer, died 1731.

Drake, sir Francis, born 1545; set sail on his voyage round the world, 1577; died Jan 28, 1595.

Dryden, John, born August 9, 1613, died May 1, 1700.

Evelyn, John, natural philosopher, born 1629, died 1706.

Fairfax, sir Thomas, born 1644, died 1671.

Fielding, Henry, English writer, born 1707, died 1754, aged 47.

Flamstead, John, astronomer, born 1646, died 1719.

Foote, Samuel, died Oct. 21, 1777, aged 56.

Fox, George, founder of the Quakers, died 1681.

Garrick, David, born at Hereford, 1716, died Jan. 20 1779.

Gay, John, English poet, died 1732.

Gibbs, James, architect, died 1754.

Glover, Richard, English writer, born 1712, died 1785.

Goldsmith, Oliver, born 1731, died April 4, 1774.

Gray, Thomas, the poet, born 1716, died July 30, 1771.

Gresham, sir Thomas, died 1580.

Hale, sir Matthew, born 1609, died Dec. 25, 1676.

Hampden, John, born 1594, killed in battle June 24, 1643.

Holinshed, the historian, died 1580.

Home, John, born 1724, died Sept. 4, 1808.

Hotspur, Henry Percy, killed July 22, 1403.

Howard, Mr. the philanthropist, born about 1725, died Jan. 20, 1790.

- Howe, lord viscount, slain in America, July 8, 1758, aged 34.
- Hume, David, philosopher and historian, born 1711, died Aug. 25, 1776.
- Hogarth, William, died 1765, aged 64.
- Johnson, Dr. Samuel, born Sept. 18, 1709, died Dec. 14, 1784, aged 78.
- Jones, Inigo, the celebrated architect, born 1572, died 1651.
- , sir William, died in Bengal, April 27, 1797, aged 47.
- Knox, John, the reformer, born 1505, died 1572.
- Latimer, bishop of Worcester, burnt at Oxford, Oct. 1555.
- Leland, John, the antiquarian, died 1552, aged 45.
- Lowth, Dr. Robert, bishop of London, learned writer, died 1787.
- Lucius, the first Christian king of Britain, reigned 77 years, founded the first church in London, at St. Peter's, Cornhill, 179.
- Lydgate, John, the historian, lived in 1440.
- Macklin, Mr. Charles, the comedian, died July 11, 1797, aged 97.
- Maitland, William, the historian, died 1757.
- Mallet, David, dramatic author, died 1765.
- Marlborough, John, duke of, died June 16, 1722, aged 72.
- Marvel, Andrew, the patriot, born 1620, died 1678.
- Maskelyne, Neville, English astronomer, died 1772.
- Maskelyne, Rev. Nevil, astronomer royal, born Oct. 6, 1782, died Feb. 9, 1811.
- Monk, general, born 1608, died January 4, 1669-70.
- Monmouth, duke of, beheaded 1685, aged 35.
- Moore, sir John, killed in the battle of Corunna, Jan. 16, 1809.
- More, sir Thomas, born 1480, beheaded July 6, 1535, aged 55.
- Mozart, Wolfgang Amadeus, musical composer, born Jan. 27, 1756; died Dec. 5, 1792.
- Murphy, Arthur, died June 18, 1805, aged 77.
- Nelson, adm. lord viscount, duke of Bronte, killed in battle in the glorious victory off Trafalgar, Oct. 21, 1805, buried at the public expense, in St. Paul's cathedral, Jan. 10, 1806.

Newton, sir Isaac, born Dec. 25, 1642, died March 20, 1726-7.

Northumberland, Dudley, beheaded for attempting to put Lady Jane Grey on the English throne, 1553.

Oldcastle, Sir John, hanged and burnt without Temple-bar, 1418; the first protestant martyr.

Ormond, duke of, impeached June 21, 1715; retired to France August following; died in France, and was buried May 22, 1749.

Ossian flourished as a poet in 300.

Palliser, Sir Hugh, died March 19, 1796, aged 75.

Paris, Matthew, the historian, died 1259.

Partridge, John, the astrologer, born 1644, died 1715.

Percival, Spencer, prime minister of England, assassinated May 11, 1812.

Pitt, William, earl of Chatham, died May 11, 1778, aged 70, and buried at the public expense in Westminster Abbey, June 9, following.

—, **William**, son of the foregoing, and prime minister of England, died January 23, 1806.

Plot, Dr. Robert, antiquarian and historical writer, born 1641, died 1696.

Pomfret, Rev. Mr. the Poet, died young, 1709.

Pope, Alexander, the poet, died 1744, aged 55.

Pretender, the old, born June 10, 1688, died 1776.

—, **the young**, his son, born Nov. 31, 1720, died January 31, 1788, without male issue.

Prior, Matthew, died Sept. 18, 1721, aged 56.

Raleigh, sir Walter, beheaded October 29, 1618, aged 65.

Randolph, Thomas, English historian, born 1605, died 1634.

Rapin, de Thoyras, English historian, died May 16, 1725, aged 64.

Richardson, Samuel, moral writer, died 1761, aged 72.

Russel, lord William, beheaded July 21, 1683.

Reynolds, sir Joshua, died Feb. 24, 1792, aged 69.

Sacheverel, Rev. Dr. silenced, March 23, 1710, died 1723.

Sancroft, archbishop of Canterbury, born 1616; committed to the Tower, tried, and acquitted, 1682; deprived, 1689; died Nov. 26, 1693, aged 77.

Selden, John, born 1584, died Oct. 30, 1654.

- Shakspeare, born 1564, died April 3, 1616.
- Sharp, Granville, one of the first who set on foot the inquiry into the African Slave Trade, died July 8, 1813.
- Shenstone, William, English poet and miscellaneous writer, died 1763.
- Sheridan, Richard Brinsley, born Oct. 1751, died July 7, 1816.
- Shovel, sir Cloudsley, lost on the rocks of Scilly, Oct. 22, 1707, aged 56.
- Sidney, sir Philip, born 1554, killed in battle Sept. 22, 1586.
- , Algeron, beheaded Dec. 7, 1683.
- Smollet, Dr. Tobias, the historian, died Sept. 17, 1771.
- Spelman, sir Henry, the antiquarian, died 1641, aged 80.
- Spence, Thomas, political economist, died Oct. 1814.
- Spencer, the poet, born 1510, died 1598.
- Steele, sir Richard, died September 1, 1729, aged 53.
- Stillingfleet, bishop of Worcester, died 1699.
- Temple, sir William, died January, 1699, aged 69.
- Thomson, James, died Aug. 27, 1748, aged 46.
- Thurlow, lord, died Sept. 12, 1806, aged 71.
- Tillotson, archbishop of Canterbury, died 1694, aged 63.
- Tooke, John Horne, born 1736, died March 18, 1812.
- Trenchard, John, born 1662, died 1723.
- Tyler, Wat, the rebel, killed, 1381.
- Vernon, admiral, died 1757, aged 73.
- Walker, the Rev. Mr. defended Londonderry, 1689; slain at the battle of the Boyne, 1690.
- Wallace, sir William, eminent Scotch general, killed 1304.
- Waller, Edmund, English poet, died 1687, aged 81.
- Walpole, sir Robert, earl of Oxford, born 1674; died 1745.
- Warwick, earl of, the king-maker, defeated and slain at the battle of Barnet, April 14, 1461.
- Watts, Dr. Isaac, born 1673, died 1748.
- West, James, the antiquarian, died July 2, 1772.
- Whitbread, Samuel, died by his own hand, July 6, 1815.
- Wickliffe, opposed the pope's supremacy, 1377; di-

ed 1384; and 40 years after burnt for being a heretic.

Wilkes, John, the patriot, died December 26, 1797, aged 70.

William, prince, son of Henry I. lost in his passage from Normandy, 1120.

Williams, sir Charles Hanbury, English historian and poet, died 1759.

Wilson, Arthur, the historian, born 1596, died 1652.

Wolfe, general, killed before Quebec, September 13, 1769, aged 33.

Wolsey, minister to Henry VIII. 1513, died November 18, 1530, aged 59.

Woollet, William, the engraver, died May 23, 1785, aged 50.

Wycherly, William, born 1640, died January 1, 1715-16.

Wykeham, William of, eminent English prelate, bishop of Winchester, died 1404.

Young, Dr. Edward, died 1765. aged 81.

III.

BATTLES IN ENGLISH HISTORY.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>Shropshire, when Caractacus was taken prisoner, 51 after Christ.</p> <p>Stamford, in Lincolnshire, the first between the Britons and Saxons, in 449.</p> <p>Hellston, in Cornwall, and in the Isle of Shepey, between Egbert and the Danes, 834.</p> <p>The Isle of Thanet, where the English were defeated, and the Danes settled, 854.</p> <p>Assenden, where the Danes were defeated by Alred and Ethelred, 871.</p> | <p>Wilton, where the English were defeated by the Danes, 872.</p> <p>Bury, between Edward the Elder, and his cousin Ethelward, 905.</p> <p>Malden, between Edward and the Danes, 918.</p> <p>Stamford, between Edward, the Danes, and Scots, 923.</p> <p>Widendane, between Athelstan, the Irish, and Scots, 938.</p> <p>Ashden, between Canute and Edmund, 1016.</p> <p>Battle-bridge, between Harold II. and Harfin-</p> |
|---|---|

- ger, Sept. 25, 1066.
 Hastings, where king Harold was slain, Oct. 14, 1066.
 Alnwick, 1092.
 Northallerton, Aug. 22, 1138.
 Alnwick, 1174.
 Ascalon, Sept. 16, 1191.
 Lincoln, May 19, 1217.
 Lewes, May 14, 1264.
 Evesham, Aug. 5, 1265.
 Dunbar, April 27, 1296.
 Falkirk, July 22, 1298.
 Bannockburn, June 25, 1314; when the English were defeated.
 Halidon-hill, near Berwick, when 20,200 of the Scots were slain July 29, 1333.
 Cressy, Aug. 26, 1346.
 Durham, when David king of Scotland was taken prisoner, Oct. 17, 1346.
 Nevil's cross, in Durham, 1347.
 Poitiers, when the king of France and his son were taken prisoners, Sept. 19, 1356.
 Otterborn, between Hotspur and earl Douglas, July 31, 1388.
 Shrewsbury, July 22, 1403.
 Monmouth, March 11, and May 11, 1405.
 Agincourt, Oct. 25, 1415.
 Beauge, where the duke of Clarence and 1500 English were killed, April 3, 1421.
 Patay, under Joan of Arc, June 10, 1429.
 St. Alban's, May 22, 1455.
 Bloreheath, Sept. 22, 1459.
 Northampton, July 19, 1460.
 Wakefield, Dec. 31, 1460.
 Towton, March 29, 1461.
 St. Alban's, 1461.
 Mortimer's Cross, 1461.
 Hexham, May 15, 1463.
 Banbury, July 26, 1469.
 Stamford, March 13, 1470.
 Barnet, April 14, 1471.
 Tewkesbury, May 4, 1471.
 Bosworth, Aug. 22, 1485.
 Stoke, June 6, 1487.
 Blackheath, June 22, 1497.
 Flodden, Sept. 9, 1513, when James IV. was killed.
 Solway, Nov. 24, 1542.
 Hopton-heath, March 19, 1642.
 Worcester, Sept. 23, 1642.
 Edgehill, Oct. 23, 1642.
 Brentford, in 1642.
 Barham-moor, March 29, 1643.
 Lansdown, July 5, 1643.
 Round-away-down, July 13, 1643.
 Newbury, Sept. 20, 1643.
 Alresford, March 29, 1644.
 Cropedy-bridge, June 6, 1644.
 Marston-moor, July 2, 1644.
 Newark, in 1644.
 Newbury, Oct. 27, 1644.
 Naseby, June, 1645.
 Alford, July 2, 1645.
 Kingston, in Surrey, 1647.
 Worcester, Sept. 3, 1651.
 Sedgemoor, Aug. 1651.
 Bothwell-bridge, 1651.

- Boyne, in Ireland, July 1, 1690.
 Fleurus, July 12, 1690.
 Blenheim, Aug. 2, 1704.
 Tirlemont, 1705.
 Ramilies, Whitsunday, 1706.
 Almanza, in Spain, 1707.
 Oudenard, June 30, 1708.
 Malplaquet, Sept. 11, 1709.
 Almanza, July 16, 1710.
 Denain, in 1712.
 Preston, Nov. 12, 1715.
 Dumblain, Nov. 13, 1715.
 Dettingen, June 15, 1743.
 Fontenoy, April 30, 1745.
 Preston-Pans, Sept. 21, 1745.
 Falkirk, Jan. 17, 1746.
 Roucoux, April 12, 1746.
 Culloden, April 17, 1746.
 Fort du Quesne, July 9, 1755.
 Lake St. George, Sept. 8, 1755.
 Calcutta, June, 1756, and in 1759.
 Plassey, Feb. 5, 1757.
 Minden, Aug. 1759.
 Niagara, July 24, 1759.
 Quebec, Sept. 15, 1759.
 Lexington, near Boston, April 19, 1775.
 Bunkers-hill, June 17, 1775.
 Long-Island, Aug. 27, 1776.
 White Plains, Nov. 30, 1776.
 Brandy-Wine Creek, Sep. 13, 1777.
 Saratoga, Oct. 7, 1777.
 Germantown, Oct. 14, 1777.
 Rhode Island, Oct. 14, 1778.
 Camden, Aug. 16, 1780.
 Guildford, March 16, 1781.
 York Town, Oct. 29, 1781.
 Seringapatam, 1791.
 Tournay, May 8, 1793.
 Valenciennes, May 23, 1793.
 Cambray, Aug. 9, 1793.
 Lincelles, Aug. 18, 1793.
 Dunkirk, Sept. 7, 1793.
 Quesnoy, Sept. 7, 1793.
 Toulon, Oct. 1, 1793.
 Cateau, March 28, 1794.
 Landrecy, April 24, 1794.
 Cateau, April 26, 1794.
 Ostend, May 5, 1794.
 Tournay, May 18, 1794.
 Maestricht, Sept. 18, 1794.
 Nimeguen, Nov. 4, 1794.
 Quiberon, July 21, 1795.
 Kilcullen, Ireland, May 22, 1798.
 Naas, May 23, 1798, at Stratford upon Slaney; at Backestown, May 25; at Dunleven, May 25; at Taragh, May 26; at Carlow, May 27; at Monasterevan, the same day; at Kildare, May 28; at Ballacanoe and at Newtonbary, June 1; at New Ross, June 5; at Antrim the same day; at Acklow, June 9; at Ballynahinch, June 13; at Ovidstown, June 19; at Ballynarusch, June 20.
 Seringapatam, May 4, 1792.
 Maida, July 6, 1806.
 Vimiera, Aug. 21, 1808.
 Corunna, Jan. 16, 1809.
 Oporto, May 11, 1809.
 Talavera de la Reyna, July 27, 1809.
 Buzaco, Sept. 27, 1810.
 Barossa, March 5, 1811.

Albuera, May 16, 1811.
 Buenos Ayres and Monte
 Video, May 18, 1811.
 Ciudad Rodrigo, Sept. 25,
 1811.
 Salamanca, July 22, 1812.
 Fort George, on the Ni-
 agara, May 27, 1813.
 Burlington Heights, June
 6, 1813.

Vittoria, June 21, 1813:
 Pyrenees, July 28, 1813.
 St. Jean de Luz, Nov. 10,
 1813.
 Black-rock, Dec. 30, 1813.
 Toulouse, April 10, 1814.
 Chippeway, July 5, 1814.
 Baltimore, Sept. 12, 1814.
 Ligny, June 16, 1815.
 Waterloo, June 18, 1815.

IV.

SEA-FIGHTS, since the *Spanish Armada*.

BETWEEN the English
 fleet and the Spanish ar-
 mada, 1588.

In the Downs, with the
 Dutch, June 19, 1652.

Again, Sept. 28, Oct. 28,
 Nov. 29, 1652.

Off Portsmouth, when ad-
 miral Blake took 11
 Dutch men of war, and
 30 merchant ships, Feb.
 10, 1653.

Off the North Foreland,
 when the Dutch lost
 20 men of war, June 2,
 1653.

On the coast of Holland,
 when they lost 30 men of
 war, and admiral Tromp
 was killed, July 29,
 1653.

At the Canaries, when
 Blake destroyed the gal-
 leons, April, 1657.

Off Harwick, when 18 cap-
 ital Dutch ships were
 taken, and 14 destroyed,
 June 3, 1655.

The earl of Sandwich took
 12 men of war and two
 East India ships, Sept.
 4, 1665.

Again, when the English
 lost nine and the Dutch
 15 ships, June 4, 1666.

At Southwold-bay, when
 the earl of Sandwich
 was blown up, and the
 Dutch defeated by the
 Duke of York, May 28,
 1672.

Off Beachy-head, when
 the English and Dutch
 were defeated by the
 French, June 30, 1690.

Off La Hogue, when the
 French fleet was entire-
 ly defeated, and 21 large
 men of war destroyed,
 May 19, 1692.

The Vigo fleet taken by
 the English and Dutch,
 Oct. 12, 1702.

Between the French and
 English, Aug. 24, 1704

At Gibraltar,

- Fresen lost 5 men of war, November 5, 1704.
- French fleet destroyed by sir George Byng, July 31, 1718.
- Off Toulon, Feb. 9, 1744.
- Off Cape Finisterre, when the French fleet was taken by admiral Anson, May 3, 1747.
- Off Ushant, when admiral Hawke took seven men of war of the French, Oct. 14, 1747.
- Off Belleisle, when he took 14 sail of victualers, July 14, 1756.
- French beaten off Cape Lagos, by admiral Boscawen, Aug. 18, 1759.
- Off Quiberon Bay, when Hawke defeated the French, Nov. 20, 1752.
- Off Ushant, a drawn battle, between Keppel and Dorvilliers, July 17, 1778.
- Near Cape St. Vincent, between admiral Rodney and admiral Don Lagara, when the latter was defeated and taken prisoner, Jan. 8, 1780.
- Near Cadiz, when admiral Rodney defeated the Spaniards, Jan. 16, 1780.
- Dogger Bank, between admiral Parker and the Dutch, August 5, 1781.
- When admiral Rodney defeated the French going to attack Jamaica, and took five ships of the line, and admiral count de Grasse, April 12, 1782.
- The same day admiral Hughes destroyed the fleet of France, under admiral Suffrein, in the East Indies.
- Lord Howe totally defeated the French fleet, took six ships of war, and sunk several, June 1, 1794.
- The French fleet defeated, and two ships of war taken, by admiral Hotham, March 14, 1795.
- The French fleet defeated by lord Bridport, June 25, 1795, and three ships of war taken, near L'Orient.
- The Dutch fleet under admiral Lucas, in Saldanna Bay, Africa, consisting of five men of war and several frigates, surrendered Aug. 19, 1796.
- The Spanish fleet defeated by sir J. Jarvis, and four line of battle ships taken, Feb. 14, 1797.
- The Dutch fleet was defeated by admiral Duncan, on the coast of Holland, where their two admirals and 15 ships of war were taken or destroyed, Oct. 11, 1797.
- The French fleet of 17 ships of war, totally defeated, and nine of them taken, by sir Horatio Nelson, Aug. 1, 1798, near the Nile in Egypt.
- The French, off the coast of Ireland, consisting of

- nine ships, by sir J. B. Warren, Oct. 12, 1783, when he took five.
- The Dutch fleet in the Texel surrendered to admiral Mitchell, on his taking the Helder, Aug. 29, 1799.
- The Danish fleet of 28 sail, taken or destroyed by lord Nelson; off Copenhagen, April 2, 1801.
- Between the French and English, in the Bay of Gibraltar: Hannibal, of 74 guns, lost, July 5, 1801.
- Sound, between Denmark and Sweden, passed by the English fleet, when Copenhagen was bombarded, April 2, 1801.
- French and Spanish fleets totally defeated off Cape Trafalgar, lord Nelson killed in the action, Oct. 21, 1805.
- French fleet taken by sir R. Strachan, Nov. 4, 1805.
- French fleet defeated in the West Indies, by sir T. Duckworth, Feb. 6, 1806.

V.

DATES OF IMPROVEMENTS AND INVENTIONS.

- AIR-BALLOONS** introduced into England, and Mr. Lunardi ascended from Moorfields, Sept. 15, 1784; Blanchard and Dr. Jeffries went from Dover to Calais, Jan. 7, 1785.
- Apricots** first planted in England, 1540.
- Archery** introduced into England, before 440.
- Artichokes** first planted in England, 1487.
- Asparagus** first produced in England, 1608.
- Baize** manufacture first introduced into England at Colchester, 1608.
- BEER.**—Ale invented, 1404, B. C.; ale-booths set up in England, 728, and laws passed for their regulation.—Beer first introduced into England, 1492; in Scotland, as early as 1482. By the statute of James I. one full quart of the best beer or ale was to be sold for one penny, and two quarts of small beer for one penny. In 1822 the duties on beer were 2,786,319*l.* and on malt, 5,013,697*l.*
- Bells** invented by Paulinus, bishop of Nola, in Campania, about 400. The first tuneable set in Eng-

- land were hung up in Croyland abbey, in Lincolnshire, 960; baptised in churches, 1030.
- Bible first translated into the Saxon language, 939; into the English language, by Tindal and Coverdale, 1534; first translation by the king's authority, 1536.
- Blankets first made in England, 1340.
- Books; a very large estate given for one on cosmography, by king Alfred; were sold from 10*l.* to 30*l.* a piece, about 1400.
- Bows and arrows introduced, 1066.
- Bread first made with yeast about 1650. In the year 1754 the quarter loaf was sold for 4*d.*; three years afterwards, in the year 1757, it rose to 10*d.*, and in March, 1800, to 1*s.* 5*d.*, when new bread was forbidden, under the penalty of 5*s.* per loaf, if the baker sold it until 24 hours old.
- Bridge, the first stone one, in England, at Bow, near Stratford, 1087.
- Buckles invented about 1680.
- Calicos first made in Lancashire, in 1772.
- Candles, tallow, so great a luxury, that splinters of wood were used for lights; first began to be used, 1290. No idea of wax candles, 1300.
- Cannon invented, 1330; first used by the English, 1346; first used in England, 1445; first made of iron in England, 1547; of brass, 1635.
- Cauliflowers first planted in England, 1703.
- Celery first introduced in 1704.
- Chairs, sedan, first used in London, 1634.
- Cherry-trees first planted in Britain, 100 before Christ; brought from Flanders and planted in Kent, 1540.
- Chimneys first introduced into buildings in England, 1200, only in the kitchen, or large hall; smoky, where the family sat round a large stove, the funnel of which passed through the ceiling, 1300.
- China made in England, at Chelsea, in 1752; at Bow, in 1758; and in several parts of England, in 1760; by Mr. Wedgwood, 1762.
- Chocolate introduced into Europe, from Mexico, in 1520.
- Cloth, coarse woollen, introduced into England, 1191; first made at Kendal, 1390; medleys first made, 1614.
- first used in England, 1580; an act passed to

prevent men riding in coaches, as effeminate, in 1601; began to be common in London, 1605.

Coals discovered near Newcastle, 1234; first dug at Newcastle by a charter granted the town by Henry III.; first used, 1280; diers, brewers, &c. in the reign of Edward I. began to use sea-coal for fire, in 1350, and he published a proclamation against it, 1398, as a public nuisance. Imported from Newcastle to London in 1350; in general use in London, 1400.

Coffee first brought into England, in 1641.

Coffee-trees were conveyed from Mocha to Holland in 1616; and carried to the West Indies in the year 1726; first cultivated at Surinam by the Dutch, 1718; its culture encouraged in the plantations, 1732.

Coin first made round in England, in 1101; silver halfpence and farthings were coined in the reign of John, and pence the largest current coin; gold first coined in England, 1087; copper money used only in Scotland and Ireland, 1399; gold coined in England, 1345; groats and half-groats the largest silver coin in England, 1531; in 1347, a pound of silver was coined into 22 shillings, and in 1352, a pound was coined into 25 shillings; in 1414, they were increased to thirty shillings; and in 1500, a pound of silver was coined into 40 shillings. In 1530 they were extended to 62, which is the same now; the money in Scotland, till now the same as in England, began to be debased, 1354; gold first coined in Venice, 1346; shillings first coined in England, 1068; crowns and half-crowns first coined, 1551; copper money introduced into France by Henry III. 1580; the first legal copper coin introduced, which put an end to private leaden tokens, universally practised, especially in London, 1609; copper money introduced into England by James I. 1620; milling coin introduced, 1662; halfpence and farthings first coined by government, August 16, 1672; guineas were first coined, 1673; silver coinage, 1696; broad pieces of gold called in by government, and coined into guineas, 1732; five-shillings and three-penny pieces in gold were issued in 1716 and 1761. Sovereigns were first coined in 1820.

Cow-pox, inoculation by, as a security against small-pox, introduced by Dr. Jenner, 1800.

Creed, Lord's prayer, and ten commandments, first translated into the Saxon tongue, 746.

Currants first planted in England, 1533.

Cider, called wine, made in England, 1284.

Distaff spinning first introduced into England, 1505.

England, so named by Egbert, 829; first divided into counties, tithings, and hundreds, 890; the first geographical map of it, 1520.

Fairs and markets first instituted in England by Alfred, about 886. The first fairs took their rise from wakes; when the number of people then assembled brought together a variety of traders annually on these days. From these holidays they were called *ferie*, or fairs.

Fans, muffs, masks, and false hair, brought into England from France, 1572.

Figures in arithmitic introduced into England, in 1454.

Fruits and flowers, sundry sorts before unknown, brought into England in the reigns of Henry VII. and VIII. from about 1500 to 1578, as the musk and damask roses, and tulips; several sorts of plum-trees and currant-plants.

Gardening introduced into England from the Netherlands, from whence vegetables were imported, till 1509; musk melons and apricots cultivated in England; the pale gooseberry, with salads, garden-roots, cabbages, &c. brought from Flanders, and hops from Artois, 1520, the damask rose brought here by Dr. Lineacre, [physician to Henry VIII.; pippins brought to England by Leonard Mascul, of Plumstead, in Sussex, 1525; currants, or Corinthian grapes, first planted in England, 1555; brought from the Isle of Zant, belonging to Venice; the musk-rose, and several sorts of plums, from Italy, by lord Cromwell; apricots brought here by Henry VIII.'s gardener; tamarisk plant from Germany, by Archbishop Grindal; at and about Norwich the Flemings first planted flowers unknown in England, as gillyflowers, carnations, the Provence rose, &c. 1567; woad, originally from Thoulouse, in France; tulip roots first brought into England from Vienna, 1578; also beans, peas, and salads, now in common use, 1660.

Use of, introduced in London for lighting streets, 14.

Glass introduced into England by Benedict, a monk, 674; glass-windows began to be used in private houses in England, 1180; glass first made in England into bottles and vessels, 1557; the first plate glass for looking-glasses and coach-windows made at Lambeth, 1673; in Lancashire, 1773; window-glass first made in England, 1557.

Grapes brought to England, and planted first in 1552.

Gunpowder first made in England, 1418.

Hats first made in London, 1510.

Hemp and flax first planted in England, 1533.

Heraldry had its rise, 1100.

Hops, first used in malt liquors in England, 1525.

Horse-shoes introduced into general use in 800; first made of iron 481.

Inoculation first tried on criminals, 1721.

Iron first cast in England, 1544.

Knives first made in England, 1563.

Lamp for preventing explosion by fire-damp in coal-mines, invented in 1815.

Lanterns invented by king Alfred, 890.

Leaden pipes for conveying water invented, 1236.

Life-boats invented, 1802.

Linen first made in England, 1253. Table linen very scarce in England, 1386.

Lithographic printing brought into England, 1801.

Magic lantern invented by Roger Bacon, 1252.

Magnifying glasses invented by Roger Bacon, 1260.

Mulberry trees first planted in England, 1609.

Muslins first manufactured in England, in 1781.

Navigable canal, the first in England, 1134.

NAVY OF ENGLAND, at the time of the Spanish Armada, was only 28 vessels, none larger than frigates.

James I. increased 10 ships of 1400 tons, of 64 guns the largest then ever built. The list of the royal navy of England was, in the years . . . 1808 and 1817

King's ships in ordinary	176	370
——— in commission	627	124
——— building at different places	66	36

Total, 869 530

Needles first made in England 1545.

NEWSPAPERS.—First published in England, by order of queen Elizabeth, and was entitled the English

Mercury one of which is remaining in the British Museum, dated July 28, 1588.

A private newspaper, called the *Weekly Courant*, was printed in London, in 1622.

A newspaper was printed by Robert Barker, at Newcastle, in 1639.—The *Gazette* was first published at Oxford, Aug. 22, 1642.

After the revolution, the first daily paper was called the *Orange Intelligencer*, and from that time to 1662, there were 26 newspapers.

In 1709, there were 18 weekly and one daily paper, the *London Courant*.

In 1795, there were 38 published in London, 72 in the country, 13 in Scotland, and 35 in Ireland; in all, 158 papers.

In 1809, there were 63 published in London, 93 in the country, 24 in Scotland, and 37 in Ireland; making a total of 217 newspapers in the United-Kingdom.

New-style introduced into England, 1752.

Paper, the manufacture of, introduced into England at Dartford, in Kent, 1588; scarcely any but brown paper made in England till 1690; white paper first made in England, 1690.

Parish registers first introduced by lord Cromwell's order, 1538.

Park, the first in England, made by Henry I. at Woodstock, 1123.

Penny-post set up in London and suburbs, by one Murray, an upholsterer, 1681.

Pins were first used in England by Catharine Howard, queen of Henry VIII.

Port-holes in ships of war introduced, 1545.

Posts, regular, established between London and most towns of England, Scotland, Ireland, &c., 1635.

Post-horses and stages established, 1483.

Post-offices first established in England, 1581; and made general in England, 1656; and, in Scotland 1695.—Increased as follows:—

1644	it yielded	£5,000	1764	it yielded	£432,048
1664	—	21,900	1791	—	481,880
1697	—	90,505	1807	—	1,670,423
1714	—	145,227	1815	—	2,349,519
1744	—	235,495	1822	—	1,958,806

- The first mail conveyed by stage-coaches began Aug. 2, 1785.
- Potatoes first brought to England from America, by Hawkins, in 1563; introduced into Ireland by sir Walter Raleigh, in 1586.
- Printing brought into England by William Caxton, a mercer of London, 1471, who had a press in Westminster abbey till 1494.
- Roads in England first repaired by act of Parliament, 1524.
- Sail-cloth first made in England, 1590.
- Saltpetre first made in England, 1625.
- Scenes first introduced into theatres, 1533.
- Shillings first coined in England, 1505.
- Ship.—The first double-decked one built in England, was of 1000 tons burden, by order of Henry VII., 1509; it was called the Great Harry, and cost 14,000*l.*; before this, 24-gun ships were the largest in our navy, and these had no port-holes, the guns being on the upper decks only.
- Shoes, of the present fashion, first worn in England, 1633.
- Side-saddles first used in England, 1380.
- Silk manufactured in England, 1604.—First worn by the English clergy, 1534.—Broad-silk manufacture from raw silk introduced into England, 1620.—Lombe's famous silk-throwing machine erected at Derby, 1719.
- Soap first made at London and Bristol, 1524.
- Steam-boat established between Norwich and Yarmouth, Nov. 1813.—Steam-boat capable of conveying 300 persons, commenced its passage between Limehouse and Gravesend, Feb. 1815.
- Stereotype printing invented by William Ged, a goldsmith of Edinburgh, 1735.
- Stirrups first used in the sixth century.
- Stone buildings first introduced into England, 674.
- Sunday-schools first established in Yorkshire, 1784; became general in England and Scotland, in 1789.
- Tea, coffee, and chocolate, first mentioned in the statute books, 1660.
- Thread first made at Paisley, in Scotland, in 1722.
- Tiles first used in England, 1246.
- Tobacco first brought into England, 1585.

Towers, high, first erected to churches, in 1000.

Turkeys came into England, 1523.

Watches first brought to England from Germany, 1577.

Water first conveyed to London, by leaden pipes, 1257.

Weavers, two, from Brabant, settled at York, 1331.

Weavers, diers, cloth-drapers, linen-makers, silk-throwsters, &c. Flemish, settled at Canterbury, Norwich, Sandwich, Colchester, Maidstone, Southampton, &c, on account of the duke of Alva's persecution, 1567.

Weights and measures fixed to a standard in England, 1257.

Wine first made in England, 1140.

Woollen-cloth first made in England in 1331; medley-cloths first made, 1614; first died and dressed in England, in 1611.

Workers, cloth, 70 families of, from the Netherlands, settled in England, by Edward III.'s invitation, 1330.

VI.

DISCOVERIES AND SETTLING OF BRITISH COLONIES.

- | | |
|---|--|
| AMERICA, North, first discovered by Sebastian Cabot, 1497; settled, in 1610. | Boston, in New-England, built, 1630. |
| Anguilla, in the Caribbees, first planted, 1650. | Botany Bay settlement, 1787. |
| Antigua settled, 1632. | Caledonia, in America, settled, 1699. |
| Baffin's Bay discovered, 1622. | Canada taken by England, 1759. |
| Bahama isles taken possession of, 1718. | Cape Breton taken and kept 1758. |
| Barbadoes discovered and planted, 1614. | Cape of Good Hope taken, 1798. |
| Barbuda planted, 1628. | Carolina planted, 1629. |
| Bengal conquered, 1758. | Ceylon taken, 1804. |
| Bermuda isles settled, 1612. | Christopher's, St. settled, 1626. |
| | Georgia erected, 1739. |

Helegoland taken, 1808.	ed, 1497, settled, 1614
Helena, St. settled, 1651.	New-Jersey, in America,
Hudson's Bay discovered,	planted, 1637.
1607.	New-York settled, 1664.
Jamaica conquered, 1656.	Nova-Scotia settled, 1622.
Maryland province plant-	Pennsylvania charta for
ed, 1633.	planting, 1680.
Montserrat planted by	Sierra Leone coast set-
England, 1632.	tled, 1790.
Nevis planted by England,	Surinam planted by Eng-
1628.	land, 1640.
New-England planted,	Tobago conquered, 1781.
1620.	Virginia, settlement of,
Newfoundland discover-	1636.

25

T
T
W
W

W
W

W
W
W

!

